



For daily latest books please visit <https://novelsguru.com/>

And also visit my Facebook page, and like and share it

<https://www.facebook.com/groups/3345453369055623>

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends.

Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

GENESIS 1 What you will be seeing here.

UNGOWAM MANONA

Me:Sir what do you think the government should do?

Mayor:The government has to provide resources for this project and make sure that each municipality does have all the necessary things.

Me: Infrastructure you mean?Mayor you do understand that you are being accused for misusing the same funds government gives this municipality to take care of the people?

The crowd agreed,the mayor looked at me baffled.

Mayor:Which haven't been proven Miss Manona.

Me:Not answering the questions say otherwise Mayor Ngunge.

He looked at me in anger.

Voice:He won't answer!He will not respond!

They all shouted one by one, the police walked closer.

Mayor: No comment.

Me: Then you shouldn't have invited me to question you in front of the same citizens that are protesting, waste of my time and company's resource.

Mayor: I am inviting you to my office because the citizens are becoming violent.

Thing with politicians they tend to protect themselves way before anything happens.

Me: I know where are your offices.

The police led him to his car, leaving with him.

Me: Soso let's go.

Soso: You do know that he'll blackmail you in his office?

Me: I just want to get out of this damn township and get back to Trenius.

Soso: We still have to cover this story first.

Voice: Sorry.

I turned to look at the woman who was walking with the Mayor.

Me: Is he cancelling?

Woman:I am just his PA.

Me: Can we help you?

Woman:The mayor is lying,there are no houses going to be built here,Genesis bought the land and he sold it without talking to the citizens.

Me:Huh?

Woman:Now he can't get the land back because he already sold it.

Me:Genesis right?

Woman:I have to go.

She was across the street before I could say something.

Me:Genesis is the Bilson company right? They seem to be making waves by controlling the government ever since my parents stepped down.

Soso:A no go to area Manona.

Me:I am not going to try and investigate the people paying my salary every two weeks.

Of course I was going to try knowing very well that if they try to get me fired, they would regret it.

Soso:I keep forgetting that your families don't get along literally and you are going to investigate. You also do understand only senior journalists are allowed on such expose?

Me:If I manage to get one of the Bilsons to have an interview with me then I can do that expose. They are a bunch of criminals in nice clothes.

Soso: You are suicidal.

Me:I am a journalist.



I sat on the chair waiting for the mayor to finally walk in,he walked in smiling with his PA carrying files on her hands,she averted her gaze from me before putting them on the table.

Mayor:Which drink do you prefer Miss Manona?

Me:I have it right here.

I put the bottle on the table.

Mayor:Get me coffee. Do you mind removing the camera so we can talk?

Me:I can record?

Mayor:Yes that is fine.

Soso walked out with the camera.

Mayor:I have to say that you are a force to be reckoned, just like your mother. She was indeed a good First Lady.

Me:Mr Mayor what is exactly going with the RDP houses?

Mayor:Like I said the government has not given us the money for the infrastructure.

Me:But what does Genesis have to do with the land?

He looked taken off guard but composed himself.

Mayor:Those are just rubbish rumours.

Me: Rumours?The same company that seem to be involved in almost all municipalities,why would it be just rumours?The houses were suppose to be built a year ago, suddenly something else is happening. Explain that.

The PA walked in with the coffee,he took it and gulped. He pushed an envelope to me.

Me:If that's money you are offering me then my job here is done.

I grabbed the recorder and got up.

Mayor: That's just for admiring your great work.

Me:Gee thanks hey but I get paid for just asking people like you questions.

I walked out rolling my eyes.

Me:He should have asked for the recording.

Soso:He tried to seduce you didn't he?

Me:Yep he tried but it didn't work.

MAYOR NGUNGE

I walked in the house feeling so tired.

Me:I am home!

My wife stepped out of the kitchen.

Layla: You have guests honey.

She kissed me.

Me:Who?

Layla: Some guy,he calls himself Genesis.

I had a mini heart attack right there but recovered.

Me: Okay thank you.

I walked in the dining room, he was sitting looking at his phone.

Me: Bilson.

He looked at me.

Genesis: What exactly is your story?

Me:Story?

Genesis:I wanted a land, you sold it to me now you are failing to tell your citizens the truth about what you did. On top of that you let a journalist leave with a recording that incriminate you and my company. Lastly you tried to bribe the same journalist?Why didn't you get the recording?

Me:She won't do much-

Genesis:How do I know that you did all of that?

Me:I don't know.

He got up, fixed his suit and walked to me.

Genesis:Did you watch the news this afternoon Mr Mayor?

Me:I shook my head.

Genesis: You have a week to make sure that it is yesterday's news or your lovely wife will be a widow. Enjoy your dinner,steak is delicious.

He walked out

leaving me standing there. I looked at the time and the news were about to start. I turned on the TV and watched.

Reporter:Good evening, I am Onika Santa, reading your 19:00 news in SAN tonight. We're going to be here until eight pm. Let's get to headlines. Citizens of Thembalethu are still

protesting outside the city hall, demanding answers and about the housing project that should have started a year ago.

I could hear my ears ring as I looked at the other headlines but I wanted to know more about this.

Reporter:Our reporter was live in Thembalethu, let's see if I can get to her.

I looked at the screen.

Reporter:Miss Manona.

The girl showed on the screen.

Reporter:I know I have talked to you before but it seems like you have more information considering the interview you had with the Thembalethu Mayor Ngunge. What exactly happened?

Manona:Thank you Onika. I went down in Thembalethu after being contacted by the Mayor to interview him in front of the angry citizens. I am afraid he couldn't give me any solid answers,he invited me to his office.

Me:Damnit!

Reporter:Did he give you solid answers as to what happened to the project?

Manona:An associate informed me that the Mayor has sold the land,of course I didn't think that a Mayor would sell

government's land to create houses for its people. The Mayor indeed confirmed that he has but didn't know how to tell the citizens about it. I also went to the land management offices and indeed confirmed that a certain company got the land through the mayor.

Reporter: Clearly the mayor Didn't think this through. Thank you for coming to chat with us Miss Manona. You heard it yourself,we have two provincial MC's coming in later to share their comments in these accusations against the mayor of Themba lethu.

I turned the TV off.

Me:Damn her!

UNGOWAM MANONA

My job sometimes was dangerous,being a political journalists was stressing considering politicians wanted their secrets buried and could kill you for them. I didn't drive to my house,I just drove home.

Voice: Incoming call.

I looked at the number before answering.

Me:Hey.

Muzi:Hey babe.

Me:Mhm.

Muzi:What are you doing?

Me:On my way home,Mom said she needed my help with something. Is everything alright?

My mother didn't say anything I just didn't want him to give me a reason to go to his house.

Muzi:When will you be back?

Me:Uhm I am not sure, tomorrow afternoon considering it's the weekend.

Muzi:This weekend is important to us Ungowam.

Me:Why is it important? It's another weekend Muzi.

He sighed:

Muzi: You are not serious Ungowam, don't tell me you forgot.

Me:I forgot what exactly?

I grabbed my diary,paging it while I drove.

Muzi:Heh marn are you serious?

There it was written with bold red ink, third year anniversary. I had to think fast,I have been so occupied thinking about work and forgot an anniversary.

Me: I can't surprise you anymore.

Muzi:Huh?

Me:I was planning to show up tomorrow now you are making me feel guilty for lying.

Muzi:I thought-

Me:I was just finalizing everything for tomorrow but now I have to think of something else.

Muzi:I am so sorry.

Oh God you are going to send me to hell for this.

Me: It's fine I'll figure something else.

Voice: Incoming call.

Me:Uhm I have to answer the planner, I'll call you.

Muzi:I love you.

Me:Love you too.

I dropped the call and answered.

Me:Was in another call. Hey.

Wonga:I tried calling you during the day and sent you a message. Got the reservation?

Me:For tomorrow afternoon dinner?Yes I did.

Wonga:Got you a dress and shoes, they are in my house.

Me:Thanks baby.

Wonga: Anything for you my love,let me not disturb you in your driving. Bye sthandwa sam.

Me:Bye baby.

Don't look at me that,I can manage two boyfriends.

GENESIS 2

UNGOWAM MANONA

I stepped out of the car grabbing my bag before walking to the gate. I greeted the guards before walking straight to the door.

Me: Molweni!(Hello!)

I walked to the kitchen.

Mom: Hello baby.

Me: Hello mamas.

I kissed her on the lips.

Dad: Hello Ungo.

Me: Dad.

I hugged him.

Me: Is anyone here?

Dad: Your siblings will be home late, you are trending and this time the Bilsons were mentioned.

Me: I didn't mention them anywhere.

Mom: You are always starting something with those people.

Me:I am doing my job, it's not my fault they decided to be criminals just like their mother.

Dad: Ungowam the past-

Me:Feels new.

My phone rang.

Me:Hello?

Voice:Miss Ungowam Manona,we just saw that your alarm was triggered. Is everything alright?

Me:I am not home,get someone there now!

I dropped the call and dialled the police.

Mom: Ungowam!

Me: Someone is trying to break in my house.

I knew that the Mayor was trying to get the recording,it was part of being a political journalist. I could be threatened but I still continued anyway. I was on my car already heading back to my house, when I arrived the security and police were there. My whole entire electronic gate was skewed,barely hanging clearly what triggered the alarm system.

Me:Well Mayor Ngunge is pissed off literally.

Policeman: You know who did this?

I showed them the message.

Me:He said that I must sleep with one eye open.

Policeman: I'll need everything, meanwhile I need you to stay away from the house. Politicians are ruthless.

Me:I know.

I sighed as I walked in the house,it was still safe but I knew soon they will break in like before. My phone rang.

Me:Yeah?

Soso: What happened?

Me: They were trying to take off my gate.

Soso:We should hire private security for you.

Me: I'll talk to my mother.

It was scary,I just didn't want to die either.

Soso: I'll come first thing tomorrow morning.

Me:Thank you.

I threw myself on the couch.



I had to get the gate fixed as the other journalists came for me. It was already all over that the mayor threatened me,I didn't

know what to say. Did I leave the house?No didn't. A knock echoed.

Me:Come in.

Muzi walked in with flowers.

Muzi:Hello babe.

I looked at him stunned.

Me:Hi.

I hugged him.

Muzi:Happy second anniversary baby.

Me:Happy!

Muzi:These are for you.

I took the flowers and something fell out. I looked at the box confused,he kneeled picking it up but didn't get up.

Me:Get up.

He chuckled.

Muzi:I don't know what to say but I want you.

Say no Ungowam!Say no! You can't say yes when you are not going to reach the aisle,say no.

Me:Yes!Yes!Yes!

Stupid. He looked so honest and sincere,I couldn't say no to him at all. I could feel my entire world spin,I was definitely making a grave mistake.

FLEUR ZARKINA

Me:Mamas!

Mom: What do you want from me?

Me:Mommy!

Mom: Zarkina Ceasar kill your daughter for me!I am starting to get annoyed here.

I laughed,it was always a sight to see my mother riled up.

Me:I need money well I am borrowing money.

I looked at my siblings.

Me:1,2,3,4,5.

She walked in, dressed in shorts and sport bra. We laughed, she rolled her eyes as she smacked my head.

Me:Mamas.

I hugged her.

Mom:Are you done packing your clothes so you can leave my house?

Me:Ouch Mamas.

My father stepped in with my suitcase.

Cesar: You can leave right now.

Me:Why are you so mean?

Kveta:She must leave this place so I can be the last born alone
you weirdo.

Me:I didn't take your place.

Leilani:All hail to the last born!

Me: You are a bunch of rubbish.

Ash:Very weird bunch of girls if you tell me.

We looked at him,he smiled pulling Mom by her arm. It was the most weirdest thing that Ash was always by Mom's side like a damn pimple. Maybe it's because he was the only boy. I was the oldest,Ash after me, Leilani and Kveta,another weird thing is that we were all named after flowers. I was so stunned when I came to learn that,funny it's Dad who named all of us. Mom just sat back and gave us nicknames. You don't want to know about mine,it makes me act like I am two.

Mom:I am going to miss you.

Me:This is why I suggested long distance.

I was doing my fourth year in pharmacy in Varlia

Advertisement

whereas my brother chose to stay in Trenius and do his second year. Leilani was doing her eleventh grade while Kvita was going to do her 9th grade. Luckily I had my car to drive.

Me:I am going to miss you Mommy and Daddy.

I felt like crying,I was miserable in varsity thinking about them all the time. My mother said a short prayer before they packed my things in the car and let me drive. My mother was a well known healer yet she didn't try to make us some sort of Christians,she just told us exactly that we had a choice but remember to tell God and he will guide us either way.



I stopped on the four-way stop,my phone rang,I grabbed it and drove. I gasped when I heard a crash,I looked at the car that I had just hit and stopped on the side. Oh God I prayed didn't I?Well your favourite healer prayed and I took a phone while driving. I took deep breaths before stepping out,I was going to jail for this that is what I thought literally. I looked at the beautiful car,it had lost it's left lamp and had a scratch. I looked at my car,it had a dent on the side. The doors opened and three guys stepped out of the car,the driver looked at his car. They all finally looked at me,I bit my tongue. I was being tempted, they were handsome.

Me: I am terrible sorry.

The driver walked to me.

Guy: You just hit my fucken car because of a phone.

Me: Technically yes that is true but where were you looking?

He raised his eyebrows.

Me:At the road of course,I don't even work.

Guy:Yet you are driving a TSI.

Me:Belongs to my mother.

Guy: Your mother has to pay for this.

Me: I'll pay monthly.

Guy: Didn't you say that you don't-

Voice:Dre let it go, we'll get it fixed in Varlia.

I looked at the guy who just spoke. Damn my mouth watered.

Dre: Nathan this girl-

Nathan:Is AJ's daughter,unless you want problems you will not insult her for such terrible mistake. She said she's sorry plus this is my car,I should be angry not you.

I stared at him as he walked forward,he pushed the Dre guy before looking at me.

Nathan: Don't pick up your phone next time.

I nodded so fast, my neck felt painful.

Nathan: Fleur.

My name sounded just perfect on his mouth.

Me: Mhm?

Nathan: I just said that you should get in your car and drive.

Me: Just in case my mother ask about your details-

He took out a card from his pocket and handed it to me, my heart jammed as our hands touched. He didn't look like he felt that.

Nathan: Bye.

He took pulled the lamp and walked in the driver's seat and drove. I stood there in daze. I looked at the card.

Me: Nathan Black, Black Pharmaceutical (CEO).

I almost died when I saw the information.

Me: PhD student in Pharmacy? How old is he?

I quickly went on Google and searched.

Me: Mxm he's Quinton Black's son, and 32 years and I am 22. I am pretty he's a thug like his father, mxm.

I threw the paper on the ground before getting in my car.

ISAAC BILSON

Xander:Well this got a lot complicated.

Me:Why?

Zaine: Mayor Ngunge is being accused of attacking the journalist who covered the Thembalethu saga.

Me: Didn't you say that the journalist works for SAN?

Xander:Well apparently I think.

Me: She's working for you but ruining your reputation?

Zaine:If you fire her,it will look bad. They are hired to do their job including exposing us.

Xander:Plus I was told she's a good political journalist,might not be a senior but she's good.

Me:Then you should start telling her to stay away from our companies. Who is she?

Xander:I own the company,I don't run it. I don't know her.

Me:Xander call order to your workers,I will not have some noisy woman in my business. I didn't ask the mayor to sell a land that belonged to the people. I owe none of them.

The door opened and my mother walked in grinning.

Me: Mom.

Mom: We have been invited somewhere.

Me: We? I can't come, I am facing few problems. Like trending?

Mom: Trending?

Xander: Again we are named as the criminal brothers.

Mom: Bad publicity isn't needed Isaac.

Me: I am working on fixing the problem.

Xander: You want me to fire the woman brother.

Mom: Do whatever you have to do to protect your job

Xander, we can't have people running their mouth every chance they get.

Zaine: It's basically the mayor who ruined everything.

Me: Accidents happen. Let's say that he got so scared and overdosed on pills or an angry mob beat him to death.

Xander: A crazy mob is fine with me.

I looked at my mother.

Mom: I am not here and I did not teach you to kill anyone.

Me: Zaine organise few men, Xander fire the woman.

Mom:Who is this woman?

Xander looked at his phone.

Xander:We might need to reconsider that.

Me:Why?

Xander: She's MJ's daughter.

Mom:I will see you when we leave.

Me:How did you hire her out of all people?

Xander:I got an editor who is responsible and it's not me.

Me: Fire her.

GENESIS 3

FLEUR ZARKINA

I finally got in my res,I was exhausted, driving six hours was a drag. I got my things to the door before locking my car,I headed inside.

Voice:Hello!

I rolled my eyes and continued walking, dragging my suitcase along with.

Voice:Fleur!

I turned and looked at the guy.

Me:Even in this semester I don't want you Lutho.

Lutho: You wound me Fleur.

Me: Obviously.

Lutho:Can I help you?

Me:No.

I dragged my suitcase,he looked at me stunned. Lutho was that annoying guy who thought he was interesting and he liked me for the past four years,I just couldn't bring myself to like him for

a second. I unlocked my room and got in,I could see my roommate lying on her bed.

Me: You are early.

Amahle:Fuck you.

Me:Who peed in your food?

Amahle:Can you believe that I am single?

Me:Ohh he found out that you are cheating again?

Amahle: It's not funny.

Me: You don't love the guy Amahle.

Amahle:He was nice.

Me:And boring.

Amahle:Why are you late?

Me:I ran someone's car down.

She jumped from her bed and looked at me.

Amahle: You did what?!

Me:Now I have to report that to my parents,who already know. I have a dent on my left side,four years I have been driving that car and I am going to lose it.

Amahle:Is the person suing you?

Me: He's rich to do that.

Amahle: Who is he?

Me: Your crush.

Amahle: Nathan Black?

Me: Apparently.

She screamed, jumping around.

Amahle: Well he's our new lecturer this semester.

Me: Huh?

Amahle: Check your emails.

Me: Great, a reminder.

Amahle: I am sure your parents won't even want to pay considering the relationship between the families.

Me: When I saw who he was, I threw the card with a mentality that I am not paying anything.

Amahle: Can I bump an enemy's car? No, no I don't have money to pay.

I chuckled.

Me: Met Lutho.

Amahle: Him? Again?

Me:Trust me,I get to die each time he speaks to me. The guy just don't know when to stop.

My phone rang,I cringed when I looked at my mom's picture.

Me:Mamas.

Mom: Speak fast.

Me:I was about to call you Mamas.

Mom: We're listening Aurora.

I knew right there I was in trouble.

Me:I bumped a car.

Mom:Why?

Me:My phone rang-

Dad: You tried to drive and talk to your phone the same time Aurora?

Me:Yes. I only broke the lamp in that car and my car has a dent.

Mom: You can use it for the rest of the week, I'll have someone pick it up next week.

I sighed.

Me:I am really sorry Mama,I shouldn't have answered my phone because I could have killed someone.

Mom: You are okay right?

Me:Yes Mamas,thanks for asking.

Mom:Are you paying for the damages?

Me:He said that it didn't matter.

Dad:Who is he?

Me: Nathan Black.

Mom:Mxm no problem but I am taking your car. You will buy yourself one.

Me:I know Mamas.

Mom:I love you too.

Me:Love you more.

The call ended.

Amahle:Do you ever fight with your parents?

Me: Barely,we are allowed to explain how we feel as long as we don't offend anyone.

Amahle: They are so nice.

Me:I am lucky to have them, though I do feel bad.

Amahle:Want to go out?

Me:Oh nope!

Amahle:I promise I won't leave with anyone,I got dumped you do remember?

Me:Fine!

UNGOWAM MANONA

I took off the ring before stepping out of the car,I got inside.

Receptionist:Miss Manona,Mr Petra would like to see you.

Me:Which one?

Receptionist:The owner.

Me:Still have no idea who you are talking about.

Receptionist:Xander Petra.

I walked to the elevator,I already knew that I was fired. I walked to the office and knocked. The door opened,some guy I had no clue of stood behind the door.

Me:Good morning.

He smiled, showing teeth with braces,it was random but he looked adorable. He definitely looked like a woman.

Me: You are so cute.

He shook his head, grinning. I frowned when I realised that another guy who looked like him sat behind the desk, frowning. I blinked, looked between them confused.

Me:Twins?

They were dressed in the same clothes, hairstyles and everything except the braces. I sat on the chair confused.

Xander: I am Xander, that's Zaine.

I involuntarily bit my lip in worry, I really didn't want to be fired.

Zaine: It's nice to meet you Ungowam Manona.

His pronunciation had me looking at him, he said it perfectly which was weird because I was sure they were white.

Me:Same What's App group.

Xander:Miss Manona, I am sure you know why you are here.

Me:I may have implicated your family in everything I have covered, which is my job.

Xander:Do you know how many clients have decided to pull out because of that article?

Me:Many?I was only doing my job, there was no need for you to buy land that was promised to the people. Yes you are rich, you can do anything but those people have nothing. They live in shacks

Advertisement

those houses could have been a bigger step in a better future but you took it.

What scared me the most,Xander didn't falter as he looked me in the eye,the guy was intimidating making me worried. I couldn't afford to be fired at all.

Xander:So you thinking your opinion is better is my problem?This world is already cruel,if you think depending on someone to get something then you are still going to suffer. Those people are unfortunate,their mayor thought it would be nice to sell a land,we found it nice. Who asked him to sell the land?We could sue you for defamation Miss Manona.

I lowered myself on the chair.

Zaine:Xander no.

Xander looked at his twin and sighed,he looked at me.

Xander:We don't owe those people anything.

I just nodded.

Xander: I pay your salary but you decided to come from my family just like your mother,I can't have that. I am afraid, you are fired.

I expected it.

Xander:If you run your mouth after this,there will nothing stopping me from suing you. You can tell your mother too that you are fired.

I wanted to cry,he stared right at me.

Me:I completely understand Mr Bilson.

Xander: You were good though but I have to protect my family.

Me:Can I leave?

He nodded,I got up and walked to the door. I could feel the tears as I walked out of the building,I wasn't going to pack my things they could just send them to me but I was leaving. I screamed the moment I got in my car.



I banged the door.

AJ:Coming!

I banged again as I could feel the tears on my face.

Me:Please open up!

The door was opened and Aunt AJ stood there in a towel. I just hugged her and cried.

AJ: What's wrong?

Me:I was fired.

She held me tight. You know my mother was kind and nice but I knew she would blow if I went to her. AJ was too calm and collected, did not say much but her actions spoke volume plus I didn't want to stress my mother. I finally stopped crying and sat down.

AJ: Is it about the latest?

Me: I prolly went a little deeper this time.

AJ: Oh baby you were just doing your job.

Me: Exposing the person who pays my salary.

AJ: I am really sorry, what do you want to do?

Me: I don't want to tell Mom, you know how she is.

AJ: She'll find out.

Me: The Petras are cruel, still are.

AJ: That's how it is baby.

Me: Where am I going to find a job? I am blacklisted, practically, no newspaper is going to want to hire me.

AJ: Well what are you going to do?

Me: I don't want to be sued.

AJ: I don't get sued.

Me:I came to you because I know you won't do something like my mother.

AJ:Her and Tia are lifetime enemies Ungo,of course she'll react plus you are her daughter.

Me:What do I do?

AJ: Fighting is going to make things worse, just find another job. Trust me I know what Tia is capable of,imagine her sons,they will destroy everything. They probably giving you a rope to hang yourself.

Me:How can you just forget?Tia Petra had you in a asylum falsely.

AJ: Again that proves how dangerous fighting can be, you are nothing like me or your mother. People die in things like this Ungowam, politicians kill whoever thinks of doing otherwise. Don't fight.

NATHAN BLACK

Dre:Then he says no, it's fine. The fuck?

Me:The child was already worried bro.

Dre: She's a Zarkina, richest family,they could have bought another car.

Me: Aren't you dramatic?

My phone rang.

Me:I will be back.

I walked out of the club.

Me:Wifey.

Autumn:Hubby.

Me: What are you up to?

Autumn:I am going out with some friends,so I won't be available until eight.

Me: Don't drink and drive.

She chuckled.

Autumn: Trust me I won't. How is the car?

Me:I will get it fixed tomorrow, hopefully it won't cost much.

Autumn:Good. I have to go.

Me:I love you.

Autumn:I love you too hubby.

Even my father was surprised when I said that I was getting married,get thought it was crazy. Two years of marriage,I wasn't regretting my decision. Autumn was amazing and still is.

Just as I about to walk in,the car that bumped to me parked next to me. I looked on the ground, considering it wasn't a parking space but a pavement.

Me:She answers her phone while driving,she creates her own parking on a pavement.

A woman walked out and literally stared at me,I waved but she still stared right at me.

Me: You are being creepy.

Fleur: Amahle!

The woman blushed furiously and hid her face.

Me: You run cars down then park here on a pavement.

Didn't the girl look me up and down?

Fleur: Have we met before?

Me: You hit my car few hours ago.

Fleur:Oops mate, that was unfortunate wasn't it?

I looked at her confused then I realised why.

Me:Now you know who I am.

Fleur: Obviously.

Me: Imagine if I had made a big deal about what you did,it would have been World War III.

Fleur:It was a good thing you didn't, would have ended in tears for you.

Me:The flower ran out of its sweetness.

She was definitely her mother's daughter.

Fleur:Lol.

She wasn't even laughing,she pulled her friend inside the club. I stood there amazed.

Me: People can switch in seconds?Damn that's fast.

GENESIS 4

ISAAC BILSON

Zaine: Suspension?

Me:No.

Xander:I honestly feel bad.

Me:I don't care,I lost a three million deal because of that article.

Zaine:Are you seriously?

Me:The government wants to its land back and is willing to pay that money,if I take the deal I'll implicate myself too.

Xander:Not anymore,not really.

The door was pushed opened and Micah walked in.

Me:Let me guess you are here to talk about what happened to your sister.

Micah: Actually I am here to show you that this company is standing on a land that was brought by the Manonas years back. Now I think I should just get it back.

I chuckled.

Me: You know it's adorable to want to fight your sister's battle but this is not your playground.

Micah: You really do think you are untouchable Genesis?

Me: I don't think, I know that I am. Now if you don't have something important, get out.

Micah: People die easily Genesis.

Me: Especially people like you.

He grinned.

Micah: This is the court order to appear in front of the judge for this land-

Me: Which you will not be getting even if you dream about it.

Micah: We'll see.

He walked out, my lips twitched.

Zaine: Ohh so this is real?

Me: There's no land they are getting.

Xander: How did we end up with this land?

Me: Your mother took it right under the nose.

Zaine: Well looks like someone knows that.

Me: Ey no one is taking this land, I won't be threatened by some wimpy kid who thinks he has the upper hand. The Manonas are fucking with me, if we lose this battle somehow. Find someone to kill him.

Xander: They will know that it's us, you do realise that?

Me: Just like MJ won't think twice before shooting one of us.

Zaine: We could settle this in a better way.

Me: Which is?

Zaine: Give his sister her job, suspend her or something.

Me: No. You want to hire her? Get her another job somewhere, if she posts about us again I will not be so kind then. Stupid Manonas, think I will follow Tia's steps and let them live.

.....
.....

I looked at the girl, she was still sleeping on my bed. I got up and shook her, she yawned opening her eyes.

Me: The cab is waiting outside, I need you to leave.

She quickly got up and dressed.

Me: I'll transfer some money you can use. I'll call you if I need you.

She nodded before walking out of the room. I grabbed my tracksuit, I heard footsteps and turned.

Britney: Still keeping these girls around?

Me: How did you get in my house?

Britney: Well I stole your pin.

Me: I will have to change my pin.

Britney: I have an interview in town.

Me: I thought you hated Trenius.

Britney: The Janges basically own this town and I don't want trouble at all.

Me: Be like your younger brothers stay next to home.

Britney: Or be like you stay in the capital city.

Me: That too.

Britney: Uhm there's a tiny problem with the job.

I looked at her.

Me: What?!

Britney: House of Jange.

Me: They won't hire you.

Britney: I am a Dellisantro.

Me: Everyone pretty sure knows who you are.

Britney:I need this to work out Isaac,I don't need negativity.

Me:We just fired MJ's daughter, it's not going to work out.

Britney:Do you know that the company is number one in African countries? People who apply for jobs there have 50/50 chances?

Me: You will not be hired.

Britney: Obviously.

Me:Why not start a business?

Britney:Do I look like I am business minded to you?I went to fashion school for a reason,I can't just start my own label with no background like HOJ. I need supporters and the house has it.

Me: Keep dreaming then.

She threw herself on the bed.

UNGOWAM MANONA

I sat on the stool going through the job posts on the internet,my position was already advertised. Just as I was about to log out my screen blinked indicating an email,I tapped on it. I almost screamed ,I grabbed my phone and called my mother.

Me:What?!

Mom:I know you don't like favours but it's something.

Me:Thank you,thank you.

I dropped the call and looked at the email again.

Me:Suck this SAN, Media24 here I come.

I quickly ran Media24 on Google,I was surprised that they owned CityPress newspaper,Daily sun and some magazines. News24 belonged to them apparently,I had no idea at all and it was the biggest publishing company. I did not want to know how my mother got me the interview at all.

Voice:Small world huh?

I looked up,Wonga stood there looking at me,I literally touched my fingers looking for the ring.

Wonga: Trust me your boyfriend already posted.

Me:I thought I said that we should keep it under wraps,I haven't told my parents about this.

Wonga:How inconvenient of him to propose when you were going through hell.

I sighed,Wonga knew that I was in a relationship with Muzi but we continued on the side.

Wonga:Since he's trapping you, am I allowed to have you?

Me:I am not moving in with him, you could come over or I will.

Wonga:Why did you say yes?I mean you don't love the guy.

Me:I said yes because I wanted to now if you don't mind I would like to continue with my work.

Wonga:Does he even know that you are not wearing the ring already?

Me:Wonga we had an agreement,if I don't want to talk about it then I don't.

Wonga:My bad,it was nice to see you.

Didn't he surprise me with a kiss on the corner of my lips before walking away? I closed my eyes for a moment and sighed.

Wonga was persistent,no wonder I ended up on cheating first.

Voice:Is this seat taken?

Me:Look Wo-

I gaped at the guy, like before he smiled showing his braces.

Me: It's free.

He sat down,I have to admit he looked like those bad boys you couldn't pinpoint.

Zaine:So what are you doing?I didn't want to come over while your boyfriend was here.

Me: He's not my boyfriend, I am just looking for a job.

Zaine: Did you check SABC website, they are looking for journalists?

I looked at him.

Me: You fired me you do remember that?

Zaine: I don't own SAN, I didn't.

Me: Why would a Bilson be talking to me right now? That fine line is gone, I can say anything right now.

He chuckled showing that one dimple.

Zaine: Do you have to inherit family hatred?

Me: That's why your brother fired me? Because I am partly a Jange and have nonsense against your mother. Your mother who murdered people and was never persecuted for that, two she had my mother deem her own sister as crazy. Three, she illegal put Aunt AJ in prison. Four, your mother imprisoned my grandmother for ten years. That's not inherited, it's the truth and looks like you and your brothers are following the same path. It's a good thing you fired me, I won't hold my tongue this time.

He was frowning the entire time.

Zaine: Then you are just like your mother or AJ.

Me: What is that suppose to mean?

Zaine: Genesis isn't like our mother,he will hurt you.

Me: Your older brother is just like your mother,maybe you too.

Zaine: Look I completely understand what you are saying but do know he wasn't named Genesis for fun, he's my brother and I know that he lacks sympathy unlike our mother. If Tia wanted your mother or aunt dead they would have been.

Me:My mother maybe,but Aunt AJ? Your mother is still dreaming about that.

Zaine:Let me leave.

Me: You are cute and all of that but this is act will fade soon.

Zaine:Thanks for the complement

see you around Miss Manona.

Me:I don't wish to bump to you anywhere at all Mr Bilson.

He smiled again before getting up and walked out.

Me: Typical!

FLEUR ZARKINA

Amahle: Let's dance!

Me:I am trying to be holy than thou.

She smirked before looking at her phone.

Me: You are still fucking the DJ?

Amahle: He's about to play your favourite song.

I fixed my mini skirt and got ready to climb the stage. Trust me,my mother was a prophet but she thought my behaviour was hers. Thank God I didn't know otherwise I would have been embarrassed, it's weird how my mother literally slammed the people who dragged me and made it clear that whoever continued would be sued. They tried and she sued them.

Me:Hold this.

Crazy? Definitely. I climbed the table as the beat started, let's just say I was a daredevil. I held on to the stripper pole, twerking was easy even though I had a small butt.

"Don't stop, pop that cat

Mm, mm, just like that

Mm, mm, shake that shit (Bow, bow, bow)

Mm, mm, work it, bitch

Don't stop, pop that cat (Bow)

Mm, mm, just like that

Mm, mm, shake that shit (Brr, brr, brr)

Mm, mm, work it, bitch"

Amahle was cheering as she got on the stage, twerking with me. That is why we were best friends, we did the most weirdest and craziest things ever.

"Patek, just for the day

If she got the gold, roll the Ace of Spades

She catch a cold when she rock chains

But lemme see, Pinky and the Brain (Brain)

Our baby mommas ain't the same

She like, "Baby daddy, ice my chain" (Ice)

She 'bout to come and give me top like a crane

You a bitch and a ho, but you gang, ayy

Shake what ya doctor gave ya

And I'ma ice your wrists like a player (Ayy)

Doc in Miami add layers

Now the ass is fat like a acre

Come to the spot and we lay up

And I'll cream that pussy like mayos

Ever since I got my cake up

I been runnin' these bitches like a mayor (Whew)

Don't stop, hatchback

Shakin' that ass on Snapchat (Yeah)

Off the script and shakin' that ass (Uh)

What you'll do for these rack, racks (Whew)

Where my thots at?

I just freed this bitch like a bird, yeah (Yeah)

Where my thots at?

Let me hit it from the back, say, "Slatt, Slatt".

I literally went on my knees, crawling popping my butt down and up. Yeah I was a stripper sometimes for extra cash, I frowned when I realised that Nathan was right in front of me, he put few hundred notes. I looked at the money, when I looked up he was gone. I took the money and put it in my pocket before getting off the stage. Everyone clapped, I just smiled.

Amahle: I am rich.

Me: Than you.

Amahle: That's nice! What are we doing with the money?

Me: Well there is this heel...

Amahle:Here.

She literally put every money she got in my pocket. Me and Amahle realised that stripping wasn't so bad on our first year,we did it occasionally but luckily we got money to spoil ourselves besides the allowances. Almost everyone knew that we were strippers not just the naked ones,we wore whatever we were comfortable in.

Me: Let's get going then.

We took our things and walked out of the club, just as we walked out, Nathan and his friends stood outside talking.

Voice:I didn't know you knew how to work your little ass Zarkina.

I turned.

Me:The guy who was angry,ugly as hell.

He frowned. Dre: Bitch.

Me: Your mother could have chosen one option, abortion or the easiest contraception and I wouldn't have to deal with you. But meh.

His face turned pink as I got in my car,he looked livid. I lowered the window as I drove past.

Me:Can always hang yourself and fix this mess. Adios bambino!

✓ GENESIS 5

AMAHLE SELANA

Me: This will suit me.

Fleur: With those bottle legs of yours, each shoe here would suit you.

Me: Thank you.

Fleur: Exactly.

Voice: Ladies.

We turned, I gasped as I looked at the guy standing in front of us.

Me: Hi.

Fleur leaned on me.

Fleur: You know this guy?

Me: Mhm?

I looked at her.

Me: You have to know him, you really do.

Fleur: Hi sir, do we know you?

He chuckled.

Me:This is Nqaba Makeleni.

Fleur:Ohhhhh. Ohhh.

I covered my face in embarrassment.

Fleur:That one,ohhh damn he fine like Swiss chocolat. Bon appetit.

Nqaba: Your friend sounds French.

Fleur:Duh.

Me:This is Fleur.

Fleur:I can speak Xhosa.

Me:Aurora stop it.

Fleur: Should I leave you alone?

Nqaba:I thought I should say hi,me and your sister were walking past.

My face dropped.

Fleur: They are still dating? When is he dumping her?

Me: He's right there Fleur.

Fleur:Oh hi Nqaba it's nice to meet you,but we have to attend a class. Bye.

She dragged me to the changing rooms.

Fleur:And then? Aren't you going to get your man?

Me: They are engaged.

Fleur: You met him first and that witch you call sister seduced him. What is wrong with you?

Me:Look the families agreed that they should get married.

Fleur:As always they agree that better things are for that witch,Amahle you don't even go home anymore. What is the use of protect their feelings when they knew what you felt? You are busy sleeping everywhere because your heart still belongs to him which is like, totally don't agree with it.

I chuckled.

Fleur:Be me for once,get what is yours.

Me:I was told ages ago what would happen if I do that,I lose the chance to finish this degree and I don't have that kind of money. I can't get any bursary to sponsor me because of this.

Fleur:How come this is the first time I hear about this?

Me:The last time I told you what happens when I go home, you told your parents and I got a place to live. I don't want to look like I am milking me.

Did she not take out her breast and looked at it confused?

Fleur: Don't see no milk,just unnecessary breasts.

I burst out laughing.

Me: You are so crazy, I just love you bitch.

Fleur: What? You said that you were milking my breasts.

Me: Yeah right I said that.

Fleur: Amahle you really do learn to stand up for yourself.

Me: I will learn.

That was the most scariest thing ever, I was never going to stand up against them not in a while no. I sighed.

Fleur: Courage won't fail you.

Me: I love you too.

Fleur: Don't embarrass me, I don't love you.

She stepped out of the dressing room with her head high.

Me: Sometimes I wonder if you are truly a prophet, you are a satanist.

Fleur: Exactly my mother is the prophet, andizingene iindaba zabantu abadala. (I don't get involved in old people's problems.)

I laughed, it was always hilarious when she spoke Xhosa, she sounded so porsh but was fluent.

Me: Say it again.

Fleur:Nah, let's pay for these and leave this miserable shop!

Everyone looked at her.

Fleur:My bad miserable people!

Me:She hasn't taken any medication yet don't mind her!

Then she started singing as we walked to the exit then we ran laughing.

Me:Oh God we are so going to get arrested.

Fleur:We got the shoes and did not even pay for them. Oh yeah!

Me:We are so wrong.

I laughed.

Me:I don't even want to mention how many stores we've robbed.

Fleur:Six.

Me:Ohh shit!!

We laughed as she drove.

.....

I looked at the screen and sighed before answering.

Me:Athandile.

Athandile:Nqaba said he saw you in town shopping. With what money?

Me:I was with my friend.

Athandile:Like the leech you are.

Me: Athandile did I do something?

Athandile:Stay away from my husband.

Me:I did nothing.

Athandile:If you dare again I will tell Mom and Dad
see how you will continue studying for that stupid degree.

I said nothing.

Athandile: Good and stay away from me and my husband.

NATHAN BLACK

We continued laughing at him.

Dre:Guys this happened yesterday.

Me:She rendered you speechless.

Tom: He's stunned,I have to say she's just like her mother. The woman is a prophet,tells something as it is without even batting an eyelash.

Me: Tell me about it.

A knock echoed,I walked to the door and opened. I blinked as I looked at the person standing outside.

Me: Autumn?

Autumn:Hello.

I smiled before kissing her.

Me: You should have told me to pick you up.

Autumn:Makes my excuse to come and see my husband even more better.

Me:Tell me.

Autumn: You left your favourite shoes.

They laughed inside.

Me: You are not serious,all the way from Red Empire because of shoes?

Autumn:I just had to come and see your pretty face.

Me:Mhmm you are not telling the entire truth.

She grinned before moving to the side,I blinked in shock as Quinn stood there.

Me: Quinn?

He looked at me and smiled.

Quinn:Big brother hi.

Me:What?! When did you come back?

Quinn: Yesterday.

I hugged him.

Me:I thought you would never come back from overseas.

Quinn:I never did too.

Me:Come in.

I stepped on the side. I was the oldest out of the Black's children well my late mother Narnia and Quinton. Me and Nia were twins followed by Quarnia then Quinn and the last born of the family Niva. Funny we were all adopted but people somehow thought I looked like my father who in return thought I looked like my mother, whereas as the children we thought Niva looked like her. It was hilarious though,not once we were made to feel like we weren't their kids at all. Quinn left the country after graduating and got a job in Italy, he was a detective just like our mother. I looked at him frowning and I knew that something was wrong.

Me: Quinn can we talk outside?

We walked out.

Me: What is going on?

Quinn: The Italians are pissed off.

Me: Why?

Quinn: They want to know why they were cut off the mafia.

Me: Because the mafia was dismissed well closed something like that.

Quinn: Without telling them anything. They feel disrespected and plan on getting answers.

Me: What answers?

Quinn: They have sent someone to come here and talk about this.

Me: You do know that Seth is the one responsible for looking after anything related to the mafia.

Quinn: And he's married to a detective.

Me: You think that they will think this was done on purpose?

Quinn: They said so with me, they plan on killing someone if that is true. I had to come home and tell everyone, I have this feeling things about to go worse.

I sighed.

UNGOWAM MANONA

Awkward was an understatement. My entire family looked between me and Muzi, they were not happy even for a second. Mom looked at me and got up.

Mom:I need you to call AJ.

Me:Ma.

Mom:Right now!

I sighed and took out my phone.

Mom:Put her on speaker.

I dialled her number, I was hoping that it doesn't rings but I knew that was highly unlikely. It rang for only two times.

AJ: Ungowam.

Mom:Do you know about this madness?

Me:Ma.

Mom:We never been so disrespected like today, Ungowam shows up with some boy claiming they are getting married. What happened to sending a letter to inform us of lobola? Have you met this boy?

AJ:Wonga?

Everyone looked at me shocked.

Dad: What is your name boy?

Muzi:Muzi.

AJ:I don't know him.

Mom:Do you hear that?The person who you go to doesn't know this boy of yours Ungowam. Where are his parents huh?

Me:I-

Dad: What are exactly are you two doing? When did he propose?

Phiwe:That day after the robbery.

Me:It was-

Mom:A trap.

Muzi looked overwhelmed,he thought I was joking when I said he needed to let me talk to my family first without him. As far as my parents were concerned this was fake.

Micah: They are engaged now.

Mom: Outside this house, this is nonsense.

I looked at my mother then my twin siblings hoping for something. Kungawo looked at me and shook his head.

Kungako:Mom and Dad what did you want them to do?

Mom: Ungowam is lying to herself and I am suppose to agree with her decision to marry a man she doesn't love?Do you know this guy?

Everyone looked at each other and looked down.

Dad:How come none of you know him? Actually AJ Ungo's godmother, they talk all the time and your sister tells her everything but look at this. Ungowam posts everything,crushes and her exes too except him. Why?

You know that amazing moment you find out that people actually notice the smallest things about you?That was the moment,my parents kept making examples why they didn't believe anything. Muzi got up.

Muzi:I shouldn't have come here,I should have trusted Ungowam to deal with this on her own.

Mom:I hope you are not thinking she's going to run after you like in a movie. She's sitting right there and you were leaving.

Me:Ca-

The look Dad gave me was enough to keep me quiet.

Muzi:No Mrs Manona that is-

Mom: You were leaving Mzi.

He looked defeated maybe the fact Mom said his name wrong. He walked out and Mom personally made sure that he was gone.

Phiwe:"Introduce thy boyfriend by The Manonas".

Me: It's not funny.

AJ: Your family is being real Ungo,why did you hide him?

Me:I don't know.

Mom:Do you love that boy?

Me:Uhm yes?

Mom:The fact that you said yes wasting his time makes me want to slap you so hard.

I moved back.

Mom:This house has rules do you remember them?

Me: Introduce the person whom you are dating,if he proposes tell him how Xhosa people do that. Unfortunately somehow I didn't tell him.

If I don't get dumped only God knows why.

✓ GENESIS 6

MUZI

She walked in.

Ungo:Hi.

Me:Hi,please sit.

She sat down,I looked at the ring on her finger.

Me:I don't understand Ungowam,please tell me.

Ungo: You thought I was avoiding telling my parents the truth,while I was trying to prepare for that. Did you see how brutal they went? You thought I was exaggerating my parents and look at us.

Me:Why didn't you introduce me to them?

Ungowam: Did you ask to be introduced?I wasn't going to force you on them. Have you introduced me to your family Muzi?

Me:My family are easy people and nice not ratchet-

Ungowam:My family is ratchet?Are you seriously insulting me right now?Why do you think that they should like you?Screw you!

She threw the engagement ring on my face before walking out.

Me:If you walk out that door don't come back.

Ungowam:With pleasure.

Then she left. I groaned in anger as I sat there,one thing about my fiancée she would rather do what makes her happy than listen to me or anyone. I dialled her number but it went straight to voicemail, I stepped out of the house and she was really gone.



I pressed the pin but it didn't bulge, clearly she changed it. I dialled her number and it rang.

Ungowam:I am not home,stop calling me.

Me:We need to talk Ungowam.

Ungowam:I am not going to talk to you either way.

Me: Ungowam I admit that it was wrong to-

I looked at the phone and it was dropped.

Me: This girl!

I dialled the number again and this time,it went straight to voicemail. I sighed as I stood outside the gate,a car pulled behind mine and stopped. I looked at the person confused,a guy stepped out of the car and walked to me.

Guy: Oh hi are you the new security?

Me:I must be looking like a fancy security.

Guy:This is Ungo said something about hiring new security and I thought it was you.

Me:I am her fiance.

He looked at me.

Guy:Mhm.

He walked to the gate.

Guy:Can you please move your car?

Me:Sure.

I walked in my car as he did,I removed my car along with him pulling his car. As I parked,he literally opened the gate and pulled his car in. I sat in my car in shock,I walked out and called Ungowam but it went straight to voicemail.

Me:The fuck?

ATHANDILE SELANA

Me:Hey.

Nqaba:Hi.

Me:Ever since you saw Amahle, you have been distant.

Nqaba: We were never close, this is just a business proposal.

Me: We're married.

Nqaba: Because your family wanted me to marry you to save my family's debt. That's all.

Me: I love you.

Nqaba: That's all you ever tell me lately.

I looked at him stunned.

Me: Do you think I wanted any of this?

Nqaba: All I know is that I didn't, what you wanted is none of my business.

Me: Nqaba do you understand that we're married?

Nqaba: By paper! I am trying to work here so I can find a way to divorce you.

Me: Nqaba!

Nqaba: I never wanted you ever, don't mistake my agreement. When is your family going to tell Amahle the truth?

Me: I told you that as family secret.

Nqaba: I am simply asking you a question Athandile. When is your family going to tell Amahle the truth? Everything is hers and you are just chowing her money she inherited from her

family. Wait the same family your parents killed in cold blood,I pray the day she remembers she burns you alive.

I cringed as I looked at him,each day my dear husband turned to a monster I didn't know. It didn't help when he met my sister,he turned to something else.

Me:We have to work together.

Nqaba: Sleep with you so you can trap me with a child? Isn't that obvious?I don't even plan on eating anything in this house.

Me: You already don't eat anything in this house.

Nqaba:Just in case you forgot I am reminding you. I will go do my work in my office, before I leave stay away from my clothes. My parents thought me how to wash my clothes,I don't need you anywhere my clothes okay? Good girl.

He took his things and left me there,I was honestly offended as I took my phone and called my mother.

Me:Amahle is ruining everything for me.

Mom: You are telling me this because?

Me:Mom!Nqaba is my husband.

Mom:Then what?

Me:I should have called my father.

Mom: He's the one supporting this nonsense of abusing Amahle

Advertisement

not me. Go report to him not me,if you think you two are going to cut her allowance like you have been doing behind my back,I will cut you off selfish little brat.

Me:Mom.

Mom:Fuck off and call your father.

The line went dead. Sometimes I keep forgetting that my mother wasn't interested in anything we did at all,she supported Amahle without uttering one single word. I called my father.

Dad: Pumpkin.

Me:Amahle is at it again,Nqaba wants to divorce me for her.

Dad: He's playing with you.

Me:No he's not.

Dad:I will talk to him, don't worry pumpkin.

Me:Thank you.

MICAH MANONA

I looked at him smiling,he looked rather annoyed as he got up.

Isaac: That's definitely enough for me to know where I stand.

Me:Are you threatening me on losing a land that your family took from me?

Isaac: You are so stupid, you really do believe that I will do whatever Tia did?I have no boundaries,trust me you will know.

Then he got in his car.

Me:One thing about the poor boy,he really believes that he's untouchable.

Someone stood right next to me.

Seth:Hi.

Me:Sanchez.

Seth: We're cousins just like I am to him.

Me:Nobody is asking you to pick a side.

Seth:I have a big problem and I need both your help but you two are busy attacking each other.

Me:Do you know what they did to Ungo?

Seth: What are you talking about?

Me:They fired her because she did her job,took a land that belongs to my family. You expect me to let it go?

Seth:Yes,these fights are pointless none of you are going to stop at all. Why didn't you ask for royalties huh?

Me: From a land they stole?

Seth: Nevertheless I am struggling to get my father to fix this mess.

Me: You are hoping my mother intervenes?

Seth: I don't know, maybe Aunt AJ but she would rather die than help Italians.

Me: What is going on?

Seth: Italians well the founders of the Italian Mafia are sending a representative to come and talk to me.

Me: What is the problem there?

Seth: There are ten families who founded this mafia Micah, I have the Blacks, Kingstons and Sanchez's but it doesn't mean anything according to the email.

Me: Be clear Seth, what did the email say?

Seth: They want a new leader, they want all our families out of their seats or cut ties with certain people.

Me: You mean cut ties with the Petras, Janges, Manonas etc?

I laughed.

Seth: Do you understand that they are basically asking me to step down for marrying a detective?

Me: Your mother is a Jange isn't she?

Seth:I know that but business wise,we have to cut ties with everyone.

Me:My mother is your father's best friend Seth.

Seth:Dr Manona I am asking you to help me here but you are busy trying to point out things that I already know.

Me:Kingstons are not Italians.

Seth:They want them out too.

Me:These guys are brutal.

Seth: You think? Whoever is coming here already has a bad vibe.

Me:The Petras will burn you alive.

Seth:Fuck them,I am in this shit because our parents thought it was cute to make friends everywhere and fall in love with their enemies. I have to do something or my wife and daughter are in danger,or anyone I am related to. Do you understand that JR Kingston and Nathan are confused as to why now? How am I suppose to know? Everything was fine until Quinn showed up telling us that they are angry, we're doing jobs that are not in the list of the Italian description.

Me:Talk to the elders.

Seth:The elders can't help me this time, your mother and your aunt could help.

Me:Ask them.

Seth:If I knew what to say,I would have went there right now. Your aunt wouldn't even let me in,I am a Sanchez remember?

Me: When is this representative coming?

Seth:In three days.

Me:I will see what I can do.

✓ GENESIS 7

SETH SANCHEZ

Dad:A representative?

Me: That's what we're waiting for here.

Kingston: You are in charge.

Me:I know but you don't understand what the Italians are demanding from me.

Dad:Ah son we can't be fighting anymore, you have a wife and a child.

Me:Giving up is the reason everyone will be in danger. Aunt AJ and MJ could help but again you are all so damn proud. We as kids are paying for your sins,do you understand?I am the middle child between the Janges and Petras just like my mother. Which side do I take?

Quinton: Let's see what this guy has to tell us.

A knock echoed.

Me:Come in.

Guard:The guests are here Mr Sanchez.

Me:Guests?

Guard: It's four of them sir.

I looked at my father.

Me:Bring them in.

The door opened,I could feel the trouble already they weren't here on good terms at all.

Me:Welcome to South Africa.

Man:Louis De Luca,this is my brother Antonio and those are our three personal guards well it is what your men allowed.

Me:Seth Sanchez.

Louis:The mixed Italian,I don't remember this mafia being friendly with the Janges until Hunter did.

Dad:De Luca hopefully you didn't come here to offend me and my family.

Louis:Can we sit?

Yeah neh it wasn't friendly at all, they sat down.

Louis: Considering what you have done for the past few years we're not done and here's a list.

It was indeed a book,I looked at it.

Me: Just like we thought.

I handed it to my father.

Louis:With that concluded we've come to a decision to ask all of you to step down and handover the reigns to us.

Me: You are kicking us out just like that?

Louis:Or cut ties with your the people mentioned on the pamphlet.

Me:My wife? My aunts and uncles?My cousins?

Louis:Tia Petra is your aunt,the same woman who drove this organisation to a bankruptcy,not forgetting Elizabeth Jange who stole thirty fucken millions under your father's nose. What else? Quinton Black's wife sold us out. You shut up!The Janges had us hanging by the damn thread, from being the feared mafia to friendly mafia with nothing. You ruined this organisation and I will be damned if I let you continue ruling any further.

Me:I am not stepping down.

Louis:I was hoping that you say that, we're done talking then only actions will show themselves.

Me:Are you threatening me?

Louis:Italians don't do threats boy,we do as we speak. I was given the power of attorney to make decisions from hereon. The guards that this organisation pay are to move back to Italy immediately,with or without your authorisation. The drugs and

weapons Avuyile Jange took and are in the police storage are to be gotten back immediately. You are going to get them back for me or start packing your families in one box. Every cent spent by all these families Kingstons,Blacks and Sanchez's has to be returned to the Italia Bank. Every little bloody thing you lost because of these relationships has to be returned or you will see.

Me:Fuck this shit.

Louis:Do try to kill me and see who winds up dead first,such pretty kids you have and you know the drill, don't act surprised.

He got up.

Louis: Quinton your kids are safe, they are not Italians after all. Good day.

He was at the door before we could even say anything.

Me: That was quick and simple. Now does anyone understand that we really have to talk to AJ?

FLEUR

Me:I hate school!

Yep I did alright.

Amahle:Me too.

Yet we were so early, we sat in the front and suddenly the lecture hall was filled. Everyone sat down, then the new lecturer walked in wearing glasses.

Amahle: He's hot.

Me: Uhm eww he's old Amahle.

Everyone whispered as he put his things on the table and looked up.

Nathan: Good morning colleagues. I am your new lecturer for this second semester. I am Dr Nathan Black, hopefully be Professor soon.

Me: Nobody asked him but alright.

Amahle: Fleur!

He looked at us and sighed.

Nathan: Hopefully we'll get to know each other well as time goes by. Do you have a class representative? Someone who will be talking to me directly about your complaints?

Amahle: Prof King chose Aurora for the job, cause she is a top achiever.

Nathan: Ohh where is she?

Me: Right here, the nicest student you will ever get.

Everyone laughed.

Me: I am nice.

Nathan:Ohh Miss Zarkina-

Me:To get along just use Fleur darling.

Amahle:Be nice.

Nathan:Okay Miss Fleur,please help me with these then.

Me: What exactly?

Nathan:I just need you to tell me what am I missing.

Me:Weh.

I got up and walked to him sitting on the chair.

Me:Here it goes.

I arranged everything and put it in front of him.

Nathan:That was easy.

Me: Like your surname.

He looked at me,I literally battered my eyelashes,he looked at me confused.

Nathan:I see that you don't like me at all Miss Zarkina.

Me:I don't like anyone ever.

I walked back to my chair,the entrance door opened and a guy walked in. He talked to Nathan.

Nathan:Guys I will be back.

Me:We wouldn't mind if you don't, it's Monday.

They both looked at me. The guy he was with looked at me.

Guy:Where are your manners?My brother is not even the same age-

Me:Who asked you?

Nathan:Quinn don't-

Quinn: You must be a brat-

Me:Top tier certified brat to be precise

Advertisement

now Queen Elizabeth listen to your brother,I wouldn't want to run you too down.

The guy looked ready to pounce on me.

Quinn: She's a bitch.

Me:Tell your mama that.

A nail on the coffin,he almost did but his brother grabbed him. I was certified mood killer,I had no stopper I offended almost every lecturer in all these years and I never stopped.

Nathan: Quinn let's go.

Me:Bye!

They walked out of the hall.

Amahle:I don't know about you but I want the brother.

Me: Heh Nathan is what now?

Amahle:A thing of the past,I like Quinn.

Me:Imagine liking a guy like him out of all people.

Amahle:This is why you are single,every man out there lacks something when it comes to you.

Me:I want a man like my father,if not I don't want him.

I got up.

Amahle:Class isn't over.

Me:Now it is.

Amahle: You are going to get us in trouble again.

Me: Don't follow me then.

Yet she was right behind me as we walked out. Dr Black and his brother seemed to be in a heated argument outside,we just walked past and they didn't even notice.

UNGOWAM MANONA

Receptionist:This is your office.

Me:Thank you.

Receptionist:The stories you are suppose to follow are there.

Me:Thanks.

I grabbed the paper on the table and looked through the words.

Me: Louis De Luca?

I read every bit of information provided, what I didn't understand why I had to interview him. Apparently he was from Italy and wanted to talk to newspapers. I grabbed my phone and called Aunt AJ.

AJ:Wam.

Me:I just had the most weird first interview here.

AJ: Louis De Luca?

Me: You know him?

AJ:Ohh I might know him, he's the one sent to remove the Sanchez's,Blacks and Kingstons from their respective seats. He was sent by the other founders to remove them.

Me:They can do that? Don't they know that everyone will be in danger?

AJ:Well who asked them to create relations with enemies?

Me:But Aunty-

AJ: Hopefully you don't think I will feel remorse for them, actually those are your mother's friends,same friends who stood with your mother while she deemed me mentally unstable. The same people that stood with Tia Petra when she locked me in a asylum. I don't care what happens to anyone.

I felt bad.

Me:I didn't mean it like that Aunt AJ.

AJ: Ungowam do your damn job and worry about who dies later. As long as you are not going to pay a single cent for their funerals, don't worry about them.

Me:Aunt Aliza?

AJ:She chose Hunter, that's not my problem. Is there anything else you want?I really have to attend a prayer session.

Me:I did-

The line died.

Me:How nice of you Ungowam!

.....
.....

I walked in the passage until I reached the room,I knocked and the door was opened. A man stood next to the door.

Me:Hi.

Man: Louis De Luca.

I really expected a really scary Italian,he was handsome and looked like those models.

Me: Ungowam Manona.

Louis:Come in.

I stepped in the room, he led me to a chair,I sat down before taking out the recording.

Louis:I didn't think AJ was serious about sending her niece.

I looked at him in shock.

Me: What is that suppose to mean?

Louis:Ask.

Me: You are?I mean I don't understand what is going on.

Louis: People are going to die in the following families,Kingstons, Sanchez's,Petras, Bilsons,Janges and Blacks as long as we don't get what we want.

Me: What do you want?

He handed me the paper,I read through everything and I could feel my heart beat accelerate.

Me:Do you have proof for this?

He handed me another document.

Me:I am allowed to put your name out there?

He handed me another paper.

Louis: That's my identity,call the Italian government and they will tell you the truth.

Me: Aren't you afraid that they will kill you?

Louis:Who?

Me:Sanchez,Tia Petra for example.

Louis: They won't even try.

Me:Ahh.

I could see my funeral already but somehow I was going to publish it anyway.

Mw:Thank you.

Louis:Now I understand why she chose you,very good friend of mine.

Me: You are friends with a Jange?

Louis:Oh no she's the friend of the foundation,helped us see the light.

✓ GENESIS 8

AJ

Cesar: Now this is something else.

I looked at the news. I put everything on the table and grabbed spoons.

Me: Love is there anything I am missing?

Cesar: That is everything.

A knock echoed.

Me: Please let them in.

He opened the door, everyone walked inside the house.

MJ: Good evening.

Me: Hey.

They all walked in, I just looked as they all sat down.

Mom: Hopefully it doesn't turn out to be a disaster.

Me: I was tempted in poisoning everyone.

Mom: You are joking right?

Me: Yes.

Everyone seemed fixed at the TV.

Mom:Guys we're having dinner here not that.

MJ: Didn't you hear that I am also mentioned in the article?
Actually everyone is mentioned except AJ.

Me:Well because I stole the guns and drugs?

Ungowam: Actually Aunty the guy mentioned that you helped them see the light.

Me:And because you know what I have done before, you believe him?No benefit of the doubt or something?Of course it is only me who will always be questioned. Louis De Luca called me a night before he talked to her,he basically told me what was going on and asked me to find a good journalist to talk to. Do I know him?No,I don't. Ungo needed the boost,after I own the media house she's working in.

Mom:These dinners are always going to go wrong.

Me:As long as everyone assume that I have done things that I haven't. One thing about me, I don't hide anything I want to do.

Lisa: Guys why are we like this huh? We're always judging each other.

Me: You don't say.

She looked at me.

Me: Have you ever apologised? Not once, don't preach it's my job not yours.

Endy: Wha-

A knock echoed.

Me: The more the merrier.

I walked to the door. Ever since I have accepted my gift I thought accepting my family would be easy but it was a nightmare, I couldn't keep up with them at all not that I wanted to because I didn't. Something going wrong in their lives, they always looked at me as if I am busy doing things in the dark. Aliza walked in with her little family. I was still finding my way in this Christianity thing, no wonder my family triggered a lot of anger in me.

Aliza: I hope you don't mind us.

Me: You were definitely not invited by me, why would I mind?

None of them were invited by me, they decided that Sunday lunch was going to be in my house. She looked offended.

Seth: Aunt AJ.

Me: Hey boy boy.

Seth: I'm married.

Me: I'm 26.

Seth: You are the youngest Jange after all.

Hunter looked at me,I just stood there as more people walked in and sat down. I knew tonight was going to end up in flames.

.....

The kids were watching TV as we all sat in silence eating dessert.

Seth:Aunt AJ,I know that you don't want anything to do with this but I really need your help.

Me: When things were smooth no one needed my help,why now?I don't have to go back to what I used to do for anyone,the same thing that had everyone selling me out. Guys come on.

Hunter:The Italians intend on killing everyone.

Me:Tell me what you want exactly?

Seth:Get everything they want.

Me:Or give them what they want, you are not dealing with drugs or guns anymore. Why is it so hard to give up?

Seth: We've made enemies,the moment they find out that we are not longer in the organisation they will come knocking.

Me:So you skip the part that I am in my journey of becoming a prophet so I could help you?Look I don't these things anymore,

you are asking me to embezzle my life in order to save you instead of getting off the chairs and find a way to protect yourselves.

Hunter: They want everything.

Me: My brother take your problems to God not me, come on. What is it you want from me? I am trying to be better but no, you are dragging me backwards each and every chance you get. Since we're talking about the past, we all know what happened when you all stood against me right?

I rubbed my forehead.

Me: Please stop thinking that I will drop everything to help you because you "think" we are fine. We are not fine, we are not okay and I am not interested. I have four kids that need me, I do something like this what about them? All you are busy think of is your kids.

I rubbed my forehead.

Me: I need everyone to take their kids and leave my house immediately.

I got up and walked to my bedroom.

Cesar: Hey

Advertisement

are you alright?

Me:I am trying to do better, suddenly I am being dragged in something else. AJ brought some stupid light to Italians. What am I?Why would I do that? Fleur is out there with no guards,why would I put her life on the line?My kids go to school with no guards Ceasar, everyone is assuming bull just because of who I was.

Ceasar:I am sure they didn't mean it like that.

Me: I am not interested in whatever they are talking about, everyone should harvest what they planted.

I walked to the window, watching them leave.

Me:I am not going back to that life ever.

ISAAC BILSON

Mom:Well things are getting worse than I expected.

Me:Some Italians are threatening to kill people.

Mom:Those Italians are raw,Hunter is soft,they are not.

Me: There's nothing they can do about it.

Zane:I have to admit it,this girl sure is talented.

Xander: What girl?

Zane: Ungowam Manona is the one who wrote the article.

Me:That is?

Xander:The journalist we fired not so long ago.

Me:Nice thing she put her own family name in there.

Zane: Obviously she knows the rules.

Me:Now this part about AJ helping is what?

Mom:I know AJ,she gives credit to herself by herself,she wouldn't let anyone do that. This guy said that on purpose,he wants the people mentioned to shift their focus somewhere else and that's on AJ.

Xander:Well he sure made everyone suspect AJ.

Me:So AJ isn't part of this?

Mom: Yes.

Me:So we are going to wait until they attack?

My phone rang.

Me: Quinn.

Quinn:The bank is on fire,the fucken bank is on fire!

Me:Bank??

Quinn:Are you in your house?Look at the damn bank!

I ran to the window.

Me: Fucken hell!

Quinn:See?I told you those Italians weren't joking.

Mom:Wha-oh black Jesus!

The fire was up in the air devouring buildings close by,it wasn't stopping either. Millions of rands lost. I looked at the scene in shock,Sanchez Black Bank was in flames with everything inside that was worth billions. I just stood there.

Me:Quinn please ask your father to get me those assassins,there are few I also need dead.

Xander:Well this looks fiery.

Zane hit him.

Me:Well message sent.

UNGOWAM MANONA

I stared at the news with wide eyes,I was honestly tempted to go there but at least it was the branch in Trenius. The intercom echoed as I just stood there amazed,I walked to the speaker.

Me:Yes?

Wonga: I'm here.

Me:Come in.

My phone rang and it was a private number.

Me:Yes?

Voice:That was a push-up.

Me: You can't seriously burn-

Voice: That's your next article,it proves that I am serious about getting what I am here for.

Me:Dude do you know how wrong it is-

The line went dead.

Me:How did I get here?

Wonga walked in,I looked at him in shock,he was carrying flowers. My heart fluttered as I took them.

Wonga: Bought something to eat.

I looked at him.

Me:Thank you.

Wonga:Was just checking on you.

Me:Thank you so much.

Hopefully I won't be catching feelings for him. Just as I was about to kiss him,my phone rang and I looked at the screen.

Me:Who is this?

Voice:I want everything you have on Louis De Luca.

Me:Who is this?

Voice: You will know me if you don't give me what I want.

Me:Who are you?

Voice:Do you have to know who I am?

Me:Well I will not give what you want unless you tell me what you want.

Voice:So you can run to your brother and tell him that I called you?

Me:Imagine a guy being sissy yet he called me.

He chuckled,I had to say the guy sounded hot and his voice sounded so wow.

Me: Now tell me who you are.

Voice:So you can google me?

Me:So insecure,are you ugly?

I could hear clicking in the background.

Me:Dude I need to check on my boyfriend.

Voice: You are pretty, didn't think that you are this pretty. The fuck?

The call ended,I looked at my phone in confusion.

Me:Heh?

Wonga:And then?

Me:Being a journalist sucks alright.

✓ GENESIS 9

ISAAC BILSON

I looked at the pictures in confusion.

Xander: I think-

I closed the laptop and looked at him.

Xander: What?!

Me: You said something huh?

Xander: I think we should consider finding a way to talk to this Louis De Luca.

Me: Mhm.

He looked at me in confusion.

Xander: What is wrong with you?

Me: Uhm nothing.

He squinted his eyes, I chuckled.

Me: I am just thinking that is my problem today. So what report do you have on the bank?

Xander: We don't know the type of bomb that blew the bank but luckily it was a branch, I am worried about what might happen actually.

Me: What do you mean?

Xander: What if he's only starting?

Me: Of course he's only starting now.

The door opened.

P.A: Your meeting is coming up Mr Bilson.

Me: Thank you.

I got up and grabbed my laptop and bag.

Xander: I'll find out more.

Me: Please do that.

I walked out.

Me: Pearl call our IT and tell him that I want him to find out everything he can on Ungowam Manona.

Pearl: Ngimphiwe is her sister.

I looked at her.

Pearl: Ungowam is MJ and Zac's daughter, well last born. She's engaged the last time I checked.

Me: She's getting married?

Pearl: Well she is.

Me: I still want the IT guy checking her out and find everything he can on her.

Pearl: Is it because of the article?

Me: Do I pay you to question my movements?

Pearl: Right at it sir.

Me: Good.

I walked to my car, the chauffeur opened the door and I stepped in. My phone rang.

Me: Yes?

Voice: You called?

Me: Ohh Spider I have a tiny job for you.

Voice: Yes Boss.

Me: Kill Louis De Luca.

Voice: Actually Sir the Italians have filtered the underground, they are tracking every assassin here including me. Somehow they knew we were going to be called, they have put a billion rands target on anyone who will try to kill De Luca. That much money, I bet he already knows who might come after him.

Me:I give it to him, he's clever and way ahead. I will just do it myself then.

I dropped the call,the car screeched as a car not far suddenly stopped in the middle of the road. The driver stopped before he could hit it.

Me:The hell?

It was close,I stepped out of the car pissed and walked to the car. It looked expensive,I paused when I realised who was driving the car. I was tempted to turn back but something was off with her.

Me:Mrs Zarkina.

AJ:Just wait.

She was looking right in front,a car drove past.

Me: It is a car.

I don't know what really happened or how,the sound echoed sending each and every piece up in flames.

AJ:It wasn't for you, it's was for me because they really think I am helping Italians.

She blinked and started her car,she left me standing there and drove away.

Me: Okay?

FLEUR

I looked at the time and sighed,my phone was flat and Amahle was gone,I didn't have my charger with me either. I waited outside as it started to drizzle,I tried bolting and the rain instead became worse. Before I could even return back to the waiting room,I was dripping water and my phone was shutting down. I sat under the verandah and it was already raining too. I wasn't interested in moving anyway,a car was about to step out of the campus,it stopped and the window lowered.

Nathan: You are sitting there and it's raining Miss Zarkina.

Me:Well I could sleep on the ground anyway.

Nathan:Come in, I'll drop you off.

Me: You don't have to be nice to me.

Nathan: Pneumonia can kill someone,please step in the car. I won't provoke you, there's thunder and lightning coming too.

Me:Is it suppose to scare me?

Nathan:I was hoping that it does,please get in.

I walked to the passenger seat and sat down.

Nathan:So where do you live?

Me: Southern Life Apartments.

Nathan:I keep forgetting that you are AJ's daughter.

Me: I didn't get the apartment because I am her daughter,I saved and took the money that was going to be used for res then got the apartment along with my best friend.

Nathan:I didn't mean to offend you.

Me: It's fine.

He looked at me at the rearview mirror.

Nathan:Do you mind if I ask?

Me:Go ahead.

Nathan: You are freezing and your apartment is about an hour from here,I live fifteen minutes away and I do have some tracksuits that could fit, they belong to my wife.

I didn't even know that I was trembling.

Nathan:We can just past there before I take you to your flat.

Me:Sure.

He drove to this house in the suburbs and parked right in front.

Nathan:I live here and my brother is inside.

I just followed him as he walked inside the house,I think he was surprised too as he looked at the people inside. They looked at him then me.

Nathan:Let me show you the bedroom.

I followed him dripping wet and headed to the bedroom.

Nathan: You can shower,I will leave the clothes here.

Me:I just need to get dressed and go back to my apartment,I can't stay for long here.

Nathan:Let me get those things.

He looked through his wardrobe and took out the tracksuits.

Nathan:Here.

He handed them to me, holding my hand in exchange

Advertisement

I looked at him.

Nathan:We have plastics in that drawer.

He walked out,I undressed and wore the clothes. I took the plastic and walked out of the room. I could hear them arguing.

Voice: Nathan you cannot and shall not bring some girls here because your wife isn't here.

I walked in.

Me:I am not some girl,I am not doing anything with him by the way. He brought me here because of the clothes,men be

blamed for cheating for just walking with a girl. For a woman you should really understand that.

The woman looked at me in shock, she looked like Nathan but girly.

Nia: She's her mother's daughter, just disrespectful and don't know the people her age.

Me: Do you know people your age? Or you think it's cute arguing?

Nathan: Ladies.

Nia: Funny my mother died all because of Janges.

Me: Janges or Manonas?

Nia: Isn't your Aunty MJ?

Me: Isn't your Aunty Aliza Jange? Ah woman try it somewhere else.

Nia: Nathan if you desire to live stay away from her.

Me: I would be advising you to be very careful of what you say to me.

Nia: All because your mother is the so great Avuyile Jange? Child that bull don't matter here, considering your mother just did what she does think of her skin by sacrificing people. How many

people died in that bomb huh?How many more will she kill
huh?

Me:My mother didn't bomb anyone nor is she letting anyone
die!

Nathan: Quinn please get Quarnia.

Nia: Your mother should have died in that asylum,that
psychotic killer.

Me:Yours really died, don't be bitter.

She jumped on me,I dodged and she went to the floor falling so
hard.

Me: Should have given those diving skills to your mother, just
maybe, just maybe she could have dove away from the bullet.

Dead silence,I really didn't care because today was the day I
was just quiet and everyone just decide to piss me off.

Nathan: Let's go.

The girl looked teary.

Me:Better use sentences that won't come back to bite you next
time.

I followed him to the car and sat down,he drove in silence.

Nathan: What you said-

Me:I don't feel guilty for responding for my mother who is being accused for helping your kind in bombing a bank,on top she goes and say your damn aunt should have kept her in an asylum. She crossed way too many lines, I'd be damned if you think I will be sorry. I am not.

Nathan: Your attitude-

Me:Woah my guy not today, just not today please don't ever be kind to me ever again.

Silence,my phone just sat on my hand blank.

UNGOWAM MANONA

I opened the door,Muzi stood there looking at me.

Me:And then?

Muzi:The gate was open.

Me:I am on my way to work,we can do this later.

Muzi: We're engaged Ungowam.

Me: We're not, it's over.

Muzi:Over?One simple misunderstanding our relationship is over?

I walked to my car and got in.

Me: Security get him off my property.

Muzi: You were waiting for this, weren't you?

Me: To break up with you? I didn't want to get married nor did I want your big headed self as my baby daddy. Who was going to poppy em babies my love?

He looked livid, he stared right at me.

Me: It is definitely hard to digest, I am sorry, could have said that I have been cheating throughout the relationship but then you won't like that either. Uhm what can I say? It was not you, it was my whoring self, it's a part and I need to go to the AA meetings, this is wrong. Ciao.

I reversed my car and drove away, could have felt guilty but I wasn't at all as I grinned. I drove straight to my workplace. I parked and walked to the entrance, I headed inside. I walked to the receptionist.

Me: Good morning, any messages for me?

Voice: Small world huh?

I turned to look at the person.

Me: Hi. Do you have any messages for me?

Zane: Look I really don't have a problem with you, I wouldn't mind working with you.

Me:Why would I be working with you?

Zane: You really do not like me.

Me:I had no stew with you but because of an article with your name on it. My family was just mentioned in a shenanigan by me,did they try to get me fired?

Zane:Look-

Voice:This is nice.

We turned and AJ stood there.

AJ:Zane this way.

I looked at him confused.

✓ GENESIS 10

FLEUR

I sat on the window watching the rain,I wiped my eyes and watched. My phone vibrated,I grabbed it.

Me:Hello.

Leilani: What is going on Fleur? Why is my Mom sad?

Me:Hey what happened?

Leilani:I just came back from school and Kveta is crying because Mom was crying.

Me:I am sure she was just being dramatic Leilani.

Leilani:Then why is she trending that someone tried to kill her?

My phone beeped.

Me:Can I just take this call?

Leilani:Why are you not answering my questions?Why is our mother sad?Or should I call Ash and ask him huh?

Me: Leilani can you calm down?

Leilani:If you think I am going to stop asking,then you don't know me Aurora.

She dropped the call,I sighed and picked up the call.

Me:Mamas.

Mom:Hey Ro how are you?

Me:I was just crying Mamas, I am scared of what might happen to you.

Mom: I'm fine.

Me:It doesn't help Mamas that they want to hurt you for something you haven't done at all. Leilani is angry as we speak.

Mom:I will deal with her,she is a little dramatic.

Me:But Mamas what are you going to do?

Mom: We'll have to go back to the high security until I am sure that you are safe.

Me:Go back to staying away from social media.

Mom:Yes.

Me:Is Aunt MJ helping?

Mom: We're figuring out something.

Me: They are not helping, isn't it?I keep failing to believe that your family will ever acknowledge their mistakes.

Mom:This is your family too.

Me:At the end of the day I am a Zarkina not a Jange,not once did my family ever abandon like yours did. Those Italians again put you on a very unnecessary place.

Mom:Stop talking like that Fleur, it's not healthy to inherit family feuds.

Me:So Nia Black has a right to say that Tia should have killed you instead?

Silence.

Mom: How did you meet her?

Me:Her twin brother is my lecturer.

Mom: I know you Fleur, you have an attitude you inherited from me. I had every reason to be like that, you are not protecting yourself with it, you are hurting people but you don't care.

Me:Mom.

Mom: Don't Mom me,if you have nothing good to say someone zip your mouth then cause clearly you don't have nothing good coming.

I sighed.

Me:Do you know how hard it is to be around people?Do you know that the moment they realise that I am your child, they

start saying horrible things and I end up being like you. It's better to defend myself from the unknown before anything happens.

Mom: What if your soulmate is no longer yours because of the attitude?

Me: I am protecting myself, if that is the case then so be it.

Mom: Fleur you can be kind, you don't have to be fighting for everyone to stay away from you. There's something good waiting if you just tone it down.

Me: I always had to defend myself, I don't think it will be that easy.

Mom: I am always one call away, you know that don't you?

Me: I am really sorry.

Mom: Don't be sorry.

Me: We were talking about you.

Mom: Your happiness is my priority more than anything Ro, I don't want you to wake up and regret things because of a stinking attitude you inherited from me or your father.

Me: My father has no attitude.

Mom: So I am the angry woman?

Me: Obviously.

Mom: I will smack you Aurora.

She laughed,I just followed.

Mom:Fleur.

My breath hitched,I knew that she was back in being serious.

Mom:I don't need you to be strong,I need my baby to enjoy the life I never did. I need you to be a child and enjoy life okay?Be a child and cheat.

I laughed.

Me:I am not interested in dating Mom.

Mom:Try Ro.

Me:I miss you Mamas.

Mom:I am not changing the topic.

Me: Come on.

Mom:Any guy?

Me:Not yet.

Why the fuck did my mind go to Nathan?

Mom: That's strange too, isn't he married?

I almost threw my phone.

Me:I love you Mamas.

She laughed.

Mom:I love you too.

I dropped the call and laughed,sometimes just merely thinking around my mother was dangerous and I kept forgetting that. The door opened,I turned,Amahle stepped in and I jumped. She was bloody and dripping.

Amahle:Athandile.

Then she fell on the floor.

UNGOWAM MANONA

I sat in the car listening to the radio,it was raining cats and dogs and my tyre was flat. On top of that I had no network,secondly I was far from my house and lastly in the middle of nowhere. I heard a tap on the window,I lowered the window.

Man:Are you alright?We drove past you three times,it is now we realise that your tyre is flat.

Me:I can't really change it in this rain.

Man: I'm a chauffeur for Mr Genesis, he's inside the car and offering to take you home. The guards will wait here for the towing truck, you can tell your friends that just in case.

I grabbed my things and stepped out of the car,he carried an umbrella,I locked my car and handed him the key. He opened for me,I got in and sat down. A man in shorts and a vest sat there talking to his phone,curly brown hair cut on the sides,he had arms for legs. He was Hercules,I watched him,as the door closed he turned,blue-ish green eyes stared right at me and I swear to God for a second I thought he was Zane Bilson but he wasn't. The curly hair just made him more dangerous,he still stared at me without moving as he spoke. I ended feeling uncomfortable and looked down. My screen blinked showing that network is back.

Voice: Don't you greet people?

I turned to look at the guy.

Me: You were on the phone and I didn't want to disturb you.

He was looking at his laptop,he turned to look at me,his face was still cold and stoic.

Me: I'm Ungowam Manona.

Genesis:Genesis.

I looked at him,it sounded so familiar just had no idea how. It was weird how he just stared at my face like he was trying to figure something out.

Genesis: Aren't you engage?

Me:I was. What's your surname?

Genesis: For a journalist that is disappointing. Anyway you are sleeping in my house

Advertisement

the road to your house is blocked, something blasted.

Me: You know where I live?

Genesis:Yes.

Me: That's creepy.

Genesis:Wait till you realise who I am, you will not think it's creepy. You will feel threatened.

I looked at him,I was trying so hard to remember him. My phone rang.

Me: Wonga.

Wonga:Are you home yet?The roads are blocked.

Me:No,I am not.

Wonga: I'll book something for you.

Me: Don't worry I am safe.

Didn't Genesis chuckle?

Wonga:Okay I love you.

Me:I love you too.

Genesis: You are safe in my car and house?Such nice weather to feel more safer in my arms don't you think?

Me:No.

He chuckled,it was weird because he did all of this while staring at me. His phone rang.

Genesis:Mhm?Kill him.

I looked at him.

Genesis:Send his body to his family in a body bag.

I stared at him now fear wrapped around me like a blanket,I was worried as he dropped the call.

Genesis:I am a killer,not interested in killing people like you though.

Did that help?I could see my own funeral,it did not help as I saw the car getting in a yard. The garage opened and closed as soon as the car was inside. I almost fell when I stepped out of the car,two huge pitbulls stood there looking at me in confusion. I didn't move,I froze. Genesis literally stepped in front of me.

Genesis:We don't eat my guests boys.

They whimpered and sat down.

Genesis:This way.

I followed him as he got in the elevator.

Genesis: You are scared.

I just nodded,he didn't say anything,the elevator stopped and we walked out. I had to say the house beautiful in it's black and grey colour. There were paintings hanging on the wall so was photos. I followed him to the kitchen,he opened the microwave and took out a box of pizza. He went around grabbing glasses.

Genesis:Do you prefer coffee since it's cold?

Me:No.

He opened the box and poured juice for me, took a slice.

Genesis:Eat.

He stood there looking at his phone,I just ate in silence.

Me:Thank you.

He just kept taking slices that's all then continued with whatever he was doing in his phone. Just as I was finishing my juice,heels clicking echoed in the house,we all turned to the door. A woman dressed in a coat stepped in and froze.

Genesis:Jason!

A guy walked in.

Genesis:Not today,escort her out.

The woman looked hurt but didn't say anything, followed the guard either way.

Genesis: Let me show you where you will be sleeping.

He was at the door as I grabbed my things and followed him, the house was big if he lived alone. I followed him until we reached the biggest bedroom I have ever seen in my life. It was a dream bedroom and clearly proved that this guy was indeed rich.

Me: Who are you?

He looked at the wall, I followed him, my heart stopped as I realised that I did kind of know him.

Me: Isaac Bilson.

He squinted his eyes.

Genesis: I said I am Genesis, didn't I?

I just nodded.

Genesis: For someone writing about dangerous people, you are easy to get to. Don't worry you are in luck because I think you're pretty.

I stared at him.

Genesis: This is my bedroom, you are sleeping here and I don't expect anything broken.

I didn't say anything.

Genesis:Do prepare the info you have on Louis De Luca if you desire to live longer..

I gulped.

Genesis:Try to sleep.

He walked out of the room,I could have said something but I didn't want to die either.

AMAHLE

Me:Ouch.

Fleur:What happened?

Me:My sister called me and said she was outside,she picked me up so I could get beaten up. All because Nqaba isn't wanting anything to do with her after he saw me.

Fleur:Is it worth it?

Me:Huh?

Fleur:Is it worth it to love a man who can't even fight for you?Is it worth it that you love a man who chose wealth over you?

Me: It's not like that.

Fleur:Screw you. The people you are busy admiring out there gave up so much for the ones they love, Nqaba just went with

the flow. Aliza was in an abusive marriage, Hunter a millionaire did he think about his status? My mother was colder than Antarctica and a billionaire, did she look past my father because of that? All these people you admire lost a lot but not once did they choose other people.

I kept quiet.

Fleur: Love hurts neh but if it has choose between you and someone else, that's not love. The faster you accept that there's nothing between you and Nqaba, the easier things get. You are hurting for no reason.

I looked at her, it was weird when she talked like that.

Me: I love him.

Fleur: You love the idea of him leaving your sister and coming back to you, the same guy sharing a bed with your sister. Is that what helps you? That you will have him? Then you will leave with the fact that you are a second option. You are scared of change like I am.

Me: What is that suppose to mean?

Fleur: The only way for me to find love is if I stop being so defensive all the time but that is scary. I am scared of getting out of my comfort zone and I am getting my guards back.

Me: What?

Fleur: The reason I have done everything to protect myself first, is coming back.

Me: Fleur.

Fleur: I am not sorry though, you are loving a man who won't choose you first like your mother did.

I cringed.

Fleur: Choose you first. I have to check my presentation.

Me: Fleur what is going on?

Fleur: The world that I want to believe in is hurting my mommy again and that is the reason I am having a hard time letting down these walls. She has protected me for years, it's my turn to do the same but she doesn't want me to. I really need to check on my presentation.

She grabbed her things and walked to her bathroom. A rude Fleur was the best, an emotional one was depressing trust me, she zoned out and never speak. My phone rang.

Me: Hello Mom.

Mom: The driver told me.

I bit my lip.

Mom: I need you to come over this weekend, I need you to know the truth about them.

Me:Ma?

The call ended,I looked at my phone in confusion. A knock echoed.

Me:Who is it?

Voice: It's me.

I walked to the door and opened.

Me:Dr Black.

He looked at my face in confusion.

Nathan:Are you alright?

Me:Yes,yes girl fights.

Nathan:Miss Zarkina forgot these in my car.

I looked at the plastic,then I realise that she was indeed wearing strange clothes.

Me:Thank you.

He nodded and walked out. I walked to Fleur's room,she was lying on the floor rug with her earphones plugged in. I just put the plastic in the basket and laid on the bed. She wasn't going to move that I knew.

✓ GENESIS 11

GENESIS

Zane:I talked to AJ about this,I have a reason to believe that De Luca said what he said on purpose. He knows that our attention will be divided.

Me:Well it is, isn't it?

I heard footsteps.

Me:Any building blown up?

Zane:Not yet.

Me: I'll talk to you when I get to Red Empire.

Zane:Sure bro.

I ended the call and turned to look at the woman,she looked like she has taken a shower already with her face clean now. She was chewing something, surprisingly had long hair.

Me:Why do you wear weaves?

She sighed,sat down and chew on her lower lip,I don't know why but I found this cute. I shook my head.

Ungowam:i struggle combing it that's why.

Me:Well you must be using hair moisturizer that is not making it soft then.

She looked at me confused.

Me:My mother has stubborn hair and uses this brand that makes it soft.

Ungowam: Would ask her.

Me:I will.

She handed me a paper.

Me:What is this?

Ungowam:Louis De Luca.

Me: You should have been a doctor,what kind of writing is this?

She giggled,I watched her.

Ungowam: You are nicer than Xander,not what I expected.

Me: I am only nice so I can get what I want.

She frowned and looked at me.

Ungowam:Very good skill Tia Petra harbours.

Me:Mrs Tia Bilson.

Ungowam:I will call her however I like,if you have a problem with that hang yourself.

Me:I am not that petty,I could just kill you but then I don't want to miss the chance to cut Micah's head off myself.

She gasped.

Me:The driver will take to your damn car.

Ungowam:If anything happens to my brother-

Me: What are you going to do?Write all about it on the newspaper and follow him to the grave?Oh liefie you clearly undermine me.

I put the cup in the sink.

Me:If you want to eat,food is right here or don't. Nobody is stopping anyone,thanks for this hey.

Ungowam: Everyone will fall-

Me: Genesis never fell and will never fall if that's what you think, just because you don't like me doesn't mean I will fail. Learn to heal that Tia fucken Petra was the greatest of all times,fooled your mother to turn against her own sister think about that. Next time you think of blaming someone,look at Minothando Jange aka MJ. Now that is something you did not think. Eat fast,I need you out of my house immediately.

I walked back to my office and dialled Xander.

Me: I'm going to send you a picture, look through everything.

I dropped the call and dialled Zane.

Me:Hey I need you to track down Dr Micah Manona and make sure that the building he took is gone by tomorrow.

Zane:You want to burn it?

Me:Yes.

Zane: You do know that he'll look at us?

Me:If he does kill him then.

Zane: Why are you angry?I will call you when I think you are calmer Isaac.

He dropped the call,I sighed and rubbed my hands. Why was I so angry?I heard a hooter outside,I walked to the window and looked outside, Ungowam stepped out, greeted the driver before getting in. I called my mother.

Mom: Isaac.

Me:Can you like buy those products you use to make your hair soft?

Mom:Are you tracking me?I am in the shop buying them as we speak.

Me:No, just someone needs them.

Mom: Someone?

Me:I will pay you back.

Mom: I'll have someone get them to you. Should I buy all of them?

Me:Yes, everything.

Mom: What's different about her?Boy you are not nice ever.

Me: She's different because-

I looked at the window, somehow she looked up as she got in the car.

Me: I don't need her kind in my life.

Mom:Now that sounds sad.

Me:I am not sad.

Mom: I'll send them to you.

Me:Thank you.

I dropped the call.

Me:Fuck!

I literally chuckled as I realised that for a moment I was nice for absolutely no reason.

Me:Fuck her!

I grabbed my coat.

AJ

"Faithful through the ages

God of Abraham

You're the God of covenant

And of faithful promises

Time and time again

You have proven

You'll do just what You said

Though the storms may come and the winds may blow

I'll remain steadfast

And let my heart learn, when You speak a word

It will come to pass

Great is Your faithfulness to me

Great is Your faithfulness to me

From the rising sun to the setting same

I will praise Your name

Great is Your faithfulness to me"

I looked at the paper and threw it in the bin. Ceasar looked at me.

Ceasar:AJ.

I just took deep breaths.

Me: Avuyile Jange is being threatened and fucken gospel music is playing in the background,fucken hell.

Ceasar:Calm down.

Me:I said my kids won't have guards hovering over them but look at them now.

Ceasar: We'll figure a way out.

Me:A way out?I am the one paying Ceasar,this is no karma fuck karma.

I took deep breaths before looking at him.

Ceasar: You do understand why you can't do anything?

Me: I can only pray,my belief is rocky and God think this time is cute to rock my life. How pathetic!

The door opened and Ash walked in.

Ash: Afternoon everyone.

Me:Hey boy,what are you doing here?

Ash: It's Friday Mom, classes end early. Two bodyguards came to get me

Advertisement

what's going on?

My phone rang as I was about to respond.

Me: Yes?

Voice: Mam there has been a breach of security in the system.

Me: Jesus!

Voice: I have a feeling that we might have guards that are not supposed to be working in the system protecting your family.

Me: What is this supposed to mean?

Voice: That no one is really safe until we find out who is on your side.

Me: How the hell do I pay thousands of rands for security that can be breached dude? My kids have bodyguards with them, you just sent four for Fleur, four for Ash and you are telling me that I can't trust them? What am I paying you for? Jonga ke nkwenkwe, uthandaze kuThixo wakho kungafi nomnye umntwana wam ngoba, Bawo wam uzakunya. Yikaka le undixelela yona ngoku, sundiqala ndingumKristu ngoku. Cima le phone sidenge! (Look here boy, pray to your God that no child

mine dies because, oh my God you will feel my wrath. This is bullshit you are telling, please don't piss me off I'm a Christian now. Drop the call stupid!)

Ash and Ceasar stood there looking at me.

Me: Prophetess Avuyile Jange what on earth neh?

They noth nodded.

Me: I really have no idea what to do, we can't trust the damn guards!

Ceasar: Calm down.

Me: If God let's anything happen to my kids, fuck this calling.

I walked out of the house with my chest burning.

Ceasar: You really need to calm down.

Me: This is getting worse Ceasar, it's not going to end until I am hurt.

He hugged me.

Me: I really don't want to go back, I don't want to go and hurt more people Ceasar. It's not what I want but I have a bad feeling, I would be left with no choice at all.

NATHAN BLACK

Quinn: What happens?

Genesis: Well it looks like they are attacking everything with their money invested in it. Whatever happens they won't suffer any loss, we do giving them leverage.

Me: Isn't there anything else we can do? Something like giving them what they want.

Zane: They are not planning on getting what they want willingly.

Seth: They want to leave us vulnerable, they want us to be hunted easily by our enemies, probably die too.

Xander: What do you think will happen?

Genesis: Well no offence but the Janges must be happy, after all they are the enemies of the organisation.

Seth: What is your mother then Genesis?

Genesis: The woman who came up with no scratch.

Seth: No scratch because she was the conniving and manipulative person who used people that cared a lot. She turned sisters against each other, keeping innocent people as prisoners. Suddenly she's better? How? If we keep defending our parents who made horrible decisions, we're still going to find no solution. Til then, I am done talking.

Genesis:Seth really do watch your tone with me next.

Zane:Ah guys.

Seth:I am not watching my tone with anyone,he needs to-

Genesis: Don't be that easy to point flaws Seth, your father did his worst in the organisation and you are here today,because of him.

Me:No wonder we inherited wars. Everyone has an ego bigger than the planet itself.

Zane: What is the use-

The ground shook,we quickly jumped to the window.

Me: Fucken hell!

The Executive Law firm started by my little brother, Niva, was exploding floor by floor in front of our eyes. Bodies flew out of the building as it went down exploding, fifty floors exploding in less than five minutes. I just stood there without moving,it was just the start of everything.

Genesis:Well message sent,if we're going to sit here and mop about the billions we're going to keep losing then clearly we're stupid. Did you see how easy it's for them to lit up everything? What are we going to do?I suggest we kill the Italians ourselves.

Seth:I must be a pony, you can't just go to Italy undetected, they will know.

Xander:So? People are dying and they are planning to leave us broke. We need leverage on them.

Quinn:I don't know guys but AJ-

Seth: Would rather die than help us.

Quinn: Don't you think it's weird that they mentioned being helped by her?

Seth:She didn't.

Me: What he's trying to say, is to ask ourselves why would they blow our buildings as said but compliment the same woman who took their drugs and weapons?

✓ GENESIS 12

UNGOWAM

Mom:Are you alright?

Me: I'm fine.

Phiwe:Then why do you look so sad?

Me: Apparently over hundreds of employees died in the bombing of the ELF.

Micah: That's sad they had to be thrown in the way of karma.

Me:Micah!This is not funny.

Micah:Was I making a joke?

Me:Micah did you really take the building that the Bilsons were using?

Micah:Belongs to the Janges,so of course I did.

Me:Are you trying to get yourself killed?

Mom: What's wrong with you?

Me:No one sees this huh?No one is being moved at all?No one is seeing that you are still divided but you are focusing on bull instead. Mom why are you doing nothing?

Mom:Do I look like a superhero?

Me: Clearly you were brave enough to sell your own sister, clearly you are still brave enough not to care after everything you have done. Yay superhero!

Mom:Are you still talking to me Ungowam?

Me:It doesn't matter, you are still the same person you were before I was born. All these problems started because you chose the wrong side and wrong people are paying for it. I hope you sleep nice at night.

I got up,grabbed my car keys and walked out of the house. I realised that our parents haven't really changed at all, they were bitter with each other and weren't willing to forgive not that I was too. I still resented all the families that put ours in misery,sometimes some battles were meant to be inherited. Just as I arrived in my house a car pulled behind me,I stopped and walked out. It was the same chauffeur.

Me:Hi.

He carried a bag with him.

Chauffeur:I am here to drop these.

I took the bag and looked inside the bag.

Me:He really got them?

Chauffeur:Not giving him brownie points but this is far,the most kindest act Mr Bilson has shown a woman.

Me:Lucky me.

Chauffeur:Indeed.

My phone rang as I was stepping back to my car.

Me:Hello.

Voice: It's me, your editor since you are close by. I would like you to cover the ELF article.

Me:I am just new.

Voice:Yet you are the only journalist capable of looking through this and write a good story about it. I need you to talk to the shareholders CFO whatsoever,I need everything by Monday.

Me:Okay.

I turned my car around and drove back to town,the ELF still had smoke covered. I just took pictures,it was still full with everyone around then I spotted Niva Black.

Me:Excuse me Mr Black!

He turned to Look at me,he looked so angry.

Niva: What?!

Me:What happened here?

Niva: You are asking me what happened? Louis De Luca made it clear that he will do this, you published that now you are asking me what happened?Are you okay upstairs?

Me: Insulting me won't change what happened here Mr Black,after all this is blood money and now you are angry it's falling down.

Niva: Blood money?Who did I kill to create a fifty floors building?

Me: Should I start counting or you are just asking so your wife could arrest me?How many people have died?

He looked at me.

Niva:265,happy?

My heart stopped as I looked at him,he walked to his car. This De Luca wasn't playing. I looked around,there were bodies covered, apparently the only survivors were people who jumped out some were still trapped inside. I looked at my phone trying to find who was a shareholder in the firm,one name popped up.

Me:Bloody Isaac Bilson really?

SETH

Kayise:What do you plan on doing?

Me:I don't know,I don't know but holding to this is creating more damage than normal.

Kayise:But at the same lives are at stake, you give up,our family is good as dead. I am sure you can make something to work.

Me:They want us to cut ties with the Petras,etc which is impossible. I am related to them so how do I just cut ties with my family?

Someone walked in.

Me:Genesis.

Genesis:I have an idea.

Me: It's horrible that I know already.

Britney walked in.

Me:Hi.

Genesis:She came up with the idea,not me.

Me: Hopefully it's not that idea to infiltrate the Italians Cyle in Milano.

Britney: Actually I have a reason to believe that only Russians are capable of making Italians back off.

Me:Russians who would rather die than help us.

Britney:Seth listen. Christiana is the key in getting Russians to help you.

Me:How so?

She sighed.

Britney:Look Christiana isn't studying overseas just because she wanted, it's because she's able to be with Dimitri undetected.

Me:Who is Dimitri?

Genesis: Dimitri Da Silva.

Me:The fuck?How?Why?What?

Genesis:Said the same thing.

Britney:I have to believe that he loves her that much not to let her get hurt,I am sure he will do anything in his power to protect her loved ones.

Me: When is Christiana coming home?

Britney: She'll be here tomorrow.

Me:Who else is having feelings for an enemy?

Britney:They are enemies because we make them to be.

She left us.

Genesis:Seth look

Advertisement

I am not saying that take sides but if it comes down to choosing or having to kill someone, please don't step in my way. I'll see no boundary,I will do whatever it takes to protect my family.

He walked out of the house.

AMAHLE

I walked to the door,I looked at Fleur.

Fleur: I need the tea.

She knocked at the door and pulled the handle opening the door, just like that.

Mom:Ohh I didn't know that you were bringing your friend.

Fleur:Fleur Zarkina.

Mom:Flair?

Fleur:Fle-h. As in Flower in French.

Mom:Nice to meet you.

I hugged her before walking inside,Athandile sat right next to Nqaba conversing like lovebirds.

Father:You are here?

Me: Good evening everyone.

Athandile looked at me in shock so did Nqaba, we sat down across them.

Athandile: You are here? You weren't invited.

Fleur: I don't remember anyone asking you either girlfriend.

Athandile: Oh you-

Fleur: If you rich enough insult me otherwise don't try that with me.

She literally rolled her eyes, Athandile literally bit her lower lip and said nothing. My mother dished up for everyone before sitting down.

Fleur: Thank you for the food Ma, it tastes so amazing.

Mom: Thank you.

Me: Why did you call me here?

She handed me an envelope, I opened it and looked at what was inside.

Me: It's my birth certificate.

Mom: Read.

I looked at the mother and father.

Me: I don't understand, why you are not here?

Dad:Why would you give her that?

Mom:This is the court order you never got to see when you turned 18.

I looked at the list of things under my name,I could feel my chest tighten as I read.

Me: Everything I have been deprived is mine.

Athandile:No,this family-

Mom:He killed your family well his brother and kept you,because if you were dead government was going to take everything.

Me:This is not happening. Nqaba?

He looked down.

Me:Oh my God you knew?This is not happening to me, continue hating me this is not true. Oh God please don't make this to be true.

My mother put a newspaper in front of me,I could feel a headache as I read it too.

Me: You are not serious! You bullied me all these years while gallivanting my inheritance,I want everything back.

Dad:We were just-

Me:I turned 18 ages ago,I want every cent you spent back!! am going to sue you of everything that you have.

I got up,I looked at Nqaba.

Me: It's like Fleur knew that you weren't really worth it,now I know why.

Nqaba:I didn't want you to feel like-

Me:The same money that is going to save your company right? Yeah right Nqaba.

I grabbed the jar with the juice and poured it on Athandile,she gasped.

Me: I've been meaning to do that,now we'll see each other in court. Let's go Fleur.

We walked in the car,the moment I got in I could feel my heart stop.

Fleur:Well you finally got the papers proving you own everything.

Me:Imagine all that acting as if I was surprised by the news. Like seriously they really believed that I didn't know that I wasn't one of them?

Fleur: Your acting skills are polished.

I laughed.

Me:I didn't know that Nqaba also knew though,he literally just didn't want me.

Fleur:That I don't know but now it's time to get back what is yours.

I was in highschool when I had to bring my birth certificate,my mother brought it but unfortunately I had to bring it back. I remember looking inside the envelope in shock,only to see names I didn't know. Of course I searched on social media, found out that everything my suppose Dad had actually belonged to my actual parents. I saw everything I needed to get everything,the birth certificate but I was under age to do so. As time went by,I never saw my certificate again nor I could find my parents' death certificates or ID's but now everything was given to me on a silver platter.

Me:He actually killed them for their riches for real.

Fleur:We are capable of anything when it comes to money.

✓ GENESIS 13

AMAHLE

Judge: You are to pay the amount owed to Miss Selana here.

My father looked like he just swallowed a lemon.

Judge: If anything strange happens to Miss Amahle, you are to be arrested immediately.

They both gasped.

Judge: Her parents' case will be looked at again. Court adjourned!

I got up and walked out of the courtroom.

Athandile: Amahle come on they took everything, including my cars.

Me: I never had one or anything.

Athandile: Please.

Me: No.

Athandile: You are so cruel-

Fleur: Darling darling you are broke, don't let yourself get sued.

Athandile walked away.

Fleur: We're rich!

I laughed.

Me: So I am going to blow it too. As I was thinking, do you want to fly to Dubai?

She looked at me confused.

Fleur: When?

Me: December?

Fleur: Of course I want to go to Dubai.

Me: Then it's a date.

Someone bumped to us.

Voice: Oh sorry.

We looked at him, I swear my whole world stopped as I looked at him. He looked at me with the glasses, he just stood and smiled.

Me: Hi.

Guy: Hello.

Fleur: Zane right?

I looked at Fleur.

Me: You know him?

Fleur: He's the twin with braces and glasses,Zane Bilson.

Zane:Fleur.

Fleur:Mhm.

Zane:Nice to meet you.

He walked away.

Me: He's hot.

Fleur:Tia Petra is his mother,dark magic is their protection,choose carefully.

Me:Wait that can't be true?

Fleur:My mother can't be followed by an angel everywhere.

Me: I thought you were joking.

Fleur:Dating a Bilson isn't something that I would suggest for you, depending on some dark power for protection is not a right thing either.

I was honestly disappointed,why did they have to be connected with such?

FLEUR

Me: I love you too.

Leilani:Who is that behind you Ro?

I dropped the box of cereal and turned around. Nathan jumped in confusion and looked.

Me: That's Dr Black,a lecturer.

Leilani: He's hot.

Me:Stay away from men.

She dropped the call,I grabbed the cereal from the floor.

Nathan:Now I know who are the guards for.

Me: Surprised they ain't trying to strangle you.

Nathan: I'm harmless.

Me: I'm not.

He chuckled.

Nathan: You really don't like me do you?

Me:I like no man except my father and brother.

Nathan:Who broke your heart?

Me:My virgin breaker.

Nathan: What did he do?

Me:He flopped my experience,gave me the worst 2 seconds of my life. How painful! I'm scarred forever.

He looked at me,I couldn't keep up,I burst out laughing and he followed.

Me:To be honest he really ruined my experience,he gave me zero orgasm.

I literally fanned my eyes as if I was crying.

Nathan: Horrible experience.

Me:After that I just stayed away from men.

Nathan:Tell me you are Joking.

Me: I'm not joking.

Nathan:Better luck next time.

Did he not ruffle my hair?

Me: Just because I am shorter, don't do that to me.

Nathan: Sorry.

Me: I'm hurting though.

He laughed.

Nathan:I can hook you up with someone.

I squeezed my eyes.

Me:Mhm wouldn't mind to test you.

I think his saliva went on the wrong pipe,I walked past him.

Me: You know where to find me.

I literally left him there,I laughed as I walked to other aisles.

●●●●●●●●●●●●●●●●●●●●●●●●

I stepped in the apartment in silence,the scene that followed after was something I didn't imagine happening. The apartment was upside down.

Guard: You can't stay here Miss Zarkina.

I was terrified as I speed dialled my mother,I was trembling.

Mom:Ro I need you to leave immediately,tell your guards not to check anything in the apartment.

Me:Mom is saying don't step in the house.

Mom: Your friend is still in school Aurora,I need you to leave.
Now!

I turned so quickly with my guards, it wasn't long as we reached the car. A banging sound echoed and the apartment went up in flames,I looked back in shock and fear.

Mom: That's it.

The line went dead.

UNGOWAM

Me: What time?

P.A:9pm.

Me:Where?

P.A:He said that you know where he lives Miss Manona.

Phiwe literally laughed in the background.

Me:Okay thanks.

Phiwe:Go like that, it's after hours.

Me: It's not right.

Phiwe: You think he's going to rape you?

No there was just something I didn't like about Genesis

Advertisement

he put me on edge and I didn't like that.

Phiwe:Stop worrying.

Me: It's past 8, it's a 50 minutes drive to Trenius Heights. What time will I be driving back home?

Phiwe: Don't let him see that you are scared.

Me: I should get going too.

Phiwe: I should too,see you tomorrow.

Me:Yeah.

I was definitely worried,the time he wanted to see me was just off.



I stood at the door.

Guard:This is the room Miss Manona.

I knocked at the door but no one opened,I turned and the security was not there. I sighed and knocked again,I finally opened the door and was rather surprised to find the room dark. I touched next to the door but didn't find the switch. I moved.

Me:Hello.

I heard a door open,I looked and the light disappeared before I could see the person. Yes,it was dark but I knew that it was him. Genesis. The door closed,I moved to the wall and I could hear his footsteps, suddenly his cologne wrapped around me like a tape. I was breathing heavily trying to pinpoint his exact location.

Genesis:Why are breathing so loud?

His voice sounded too close,I moved only to step on him. The lights turned on,he pinned me on the wall. He was wearing shorts only.

Me:Let me go now, I am here for the interview.

Genesis:But liefie you walked in my bedroom on your own wearing this.

He said trailing his eyes on my bare chest to my legs,I didn't think much when I just took a crop top and shorts. I found myself clenching my thighs. He chuckled before letting me go and turned. The tattoo 'Genesis' stood bold on his back and a pouncing wolf under with the same eyes as his.

Genesis:Are you going to tell me why you are in my room?

The interview duhh.

Me:I thought I could find the switch.

The hell? He stopped packing the books on the bed and turned,he grinned.

Genesis:Or you really wanted to find out if I can make you scream my name the whole night?Then buy you a wheelchair tomorrow?

I gulped,the guy was bold way too bold.

Me:That-where are you going?

I asked even though I could see that he was coming towards me. A knock echoed,he paused.

Voice:Mr Bilson, I am here to tell you about your meeting in thirty minutes.

Genesis: Sit so we can start with the interview. That's why you are here right?

I just nodded. He pulled a chair for me and I sat down.

Me: Did you have to let me come here at this time?

He leaned his head on his hand.

Genesis: I'm hoping that you don't go home.

I blinked.

Genesis: Shower the room with your moans.

I gasped.

Genesis: We've lost 32 billion rands ever since De Luca started and by the looks of it he's not going to stop.

Me: How do you feel about this?

Genesis: 300 dead bodies and counting isn't something we're looking forward to, 300 funerals isn't something nice either. We are going to apologize for what exactly? Families are left bare with no one to feed them. Insurance is going to cover funerals but we don't have 32 billion rands to cover for this loss.

I really felt bad.

Me: What are you going to do?

Genesis: I don't know, I really don't know.

I couldn't continue with the interview anymore, it felt like my fault this has happened.

Genesis: I also don't understand why they are working so hard to kill your aunt?

Me: I don't know either.

Genesis: Maybe because of her net-worth.

Me: Net-worth.

He chuckled.

Genesis: If you think your mother, my mother, Aliza etc are the richest women in the world then you should really count everything AJ owns. 90% of the things that have Jange on them are hers, the international airport for example, five hospitals too and etc.

Me: Huh?

Genesis: She's the only one capable of paying everything.

Me: You are joking, she's just rich.

Genesis: If you say so.

He went quiet and watched me.

Genesis: Muzi right? He's stalking you.

I looked at him in confusion.

Genesis:So are you going to make something to eat while I attend the meeting?

Me:Huh?

Genesis:Want to order?

Me:Huh?

Genesis:Want to eat out?

I got up,he followed with my head spinning.

Me:Slow down.

He literally walked to me.

Genesis:I have fallen in love before but this is worse,I am not staying away from you anyway. I like you somehow liefie.

He put his hand under my chin and pulled it up.

Genesis: Wouldn't mind seeing you naked.

I literally clenched my thighs.

Me: You are bipolar.

Genesis: I know and it's your fault.

I think he had me stuck on his eyes,to a point I didn't feel how his hand got on my waist. I don't know what I was feeling but I leaned on him.

Genesis: Can I cancel the meeting?

I chuckled.

Me:No.

Genesis: You are not leaving the house anyway.

He just squeezed my waist and walked to the door grabbing his T-shirt.

✓ GENESIS 14

GENESIS

Me:Mhm.

I watched her from the door walking around the kitchen,she had earphones,bending allover my kitchen and stretching. She was actually cooking.

Voice:Mr Bilson?

I looked back at the screen, everyone looked at me confused.

Me:Can we reschedule?

They looked at me confused.

Me: I'll call you tomorrow,better pick up if you desire working with me.

I dropped the call and closed my laptop,I walked to the kitchen and walked in. She was trying to get something from the cupboard,I grabbed the spices and put them down.

Ungowam: Clearly you are the only one capable of getting things in this kitchen.

Me: Obviously.

I watched her, she was concentrated on her pots to even see me watch her.

Me: Was expecting you to give me a hell of a fight.

Ungowam: I kind of don't like driving at night.

I stood next to her, I was trying to understand my fascination with the woman but instead I wanted to hold her tighter. I actually grabbed her and pulled her closer.

Me: Interesting.

Ungowam: I'm cooking.

Me: You are suppose to move unless you are feeling the same thing I'm feeling.

Ungowam: It's not-

I turned the stove off.

Ungowam: Wha-

I pulled her up and put her on the table.

Me: At least you are taller.

Ungowam: Ouch.

She looked everywhere except my face, I pulled her closer.

Me: I am going to kiss you.

Now she looked at me,my lips touched hers and she tensed. I don't know what I was doing but I wasn't planning to stop either.

Me:I am not stopping.

I kissed her,she pulled me down to her,I picked her up and walked back to my room. I put her slowly on the bed, I kissed her then went down on her neck. She pulled my hair,I pulled her breast out of the top she was wearing,I played with her nipple as I untied the crop top. She literally pulled my T-shirt up,I almost jumped as her hands laid on my chest. She looked up as I looked from her face to her stomach. I brushed her softly before slowing down and kissed her. She wrapped her hands around my neck,I took small bites from the corners of her lips. I went down as I pushed her hands down,she put her legs up and wrapped them around my waist. I looked at her again,I wanted to see if I had to turn back but somehow she was not interested in stopping. I got back up as I unzipped her shorts,she looked at me.

Me: You are something.

Ungowam:Wha-ahh.

She gasped,I brushed her coochie,she tried to clasp her thighs but I put my leg between them. I watched as she bit her lips trying not to act affected. She was warm as I put my finger

inside her, she literally put her face on my chest and grabbed my arms. The moisture was enough for me to want to rip her apart but patience. I removed my finger, pulled her shorts down then pulled her panties, I put them in my pocket. I looked at her as she laid there naked, she looked at me.

Me: Admiring the view.

She grabbed a pillow and threw it at me. I chuckled as I pulled my shorts down, I locked the door and turned humidifier on, I grabbed a condom. I walked back and she was pretended not to watch me. I clasped her breast before putting it in my mouth, she literally jumped and I sucked. I stopped as she sunk her nails on my arms, I could feel my dick getting painful hard against her thigh. As I laid besides her, I pulled her leg up and slowly thrust, I was gentle enough to accomodate her. Her moans, her warmth was driving me crazy instead. I turned her around and thrust again with her legs in the air. Her nails sunk on my arms, I thrust too rough she nearly ripped my arms. I could feel her getting tighter as I thrust nonstop. I could feel the warm liquid spasm

I turned her around again. Pushed her face on the pillow, pulled her waist up before thrusting. I could feel my dick getting ready to release, then I did. I pulled out removing the condom, I spanked her, she literally let herself fall on the bed. I grabbed the water.

Ungowam:Can I?

I handed her the water,I laid besides her.

Me: I'm only being a gentleman for 30 minutes then this room will listen to you scream.

She gasped,I put my hand between her thighs.

TIA PETRA

Tiana:Christiana wouldn't date Dimitri.

Christiana walked in.

Christiana:Hello?

Me:Please sit down.

Seth:Welcome back.

She sat down putting her luggage by the door.

Me:We know who you are dating.

Her face lost all blood.

Christiana:He makes me happy.

Me: We're not interested in that actually,we are interested in asking him to help us with the Italians.

Christiana:The same Italians that told him if he helps they will kill him?

Me:They won't kill him,Italians know exactly what Russians are capable of.

Christiana:Aunty, Dimitri isn't responsible for the Russian anymore. Rickus Da Silva is.

I looked at her in shock.

Tiana:As in AJ's suppose father-in-law?Are you serious?

Christiana:Yeah.

I chuckled.

Me:Life,so we depend on AJ to help us?We depend on AJ to protect us.

Xander walked in looking like he just stepped out of hell.

Me: What happened?

Xander:Just a fight.

Tiana:Fight with who?

Me:Xander!

He fell on the floor,I grabbed him by the head only to come back with blood. I looked at his head,he was bleeding nonstop.

Me:Call the ambulance!Xander!

.....
..

Zak: What happened?

Me:I don't know.

I rubbed my head.

Zak:Tia what is going on?It was the buildings now our kids.

Me:I don't know what happened to Xander, stop questioning me!

Zak: Woman I don't care what is your deal with Italians,my problem is my kids getting harmed because of that deal.

I looked at him.

Me:This is not the time for this Zachary.

Zak:If anything else happens to my kids because you can't pay what you owe them, we'll have a problem Tia.

I looked at him and sighed,he got up and walked out of the waiting room. I tried calling Isaac but he wasn't picking up.

Zane: Don't worry, Genesis is a little busy.

I looked at him.

Me:Busy with?

Zane:I also don't know much but he has some few meetings lined up for him.

MJ

Hunter: I have never been this confused.

I looked at the news,it was everywhere that Fleur's apartment was bombed yesterday afternoon. I dialled AJ's number again,it went straight to voicemail.

Kingston:And?

Me: I have five kids, they are leading different lives now whatever I do affects them. How do I help you or my sister?The Italians sure calculated everything.

My phone rang.

Me:Hello.

Tia:Xander has been hospitalized,the Italians are crossing lines now.

Me: They bombed an apartment where AJ's daughter lived.

Tia:I think it's time we talked and give up everything.

Me:Can we do that?

Tia:Do we have a choice?

Me: I'll set a meeting for tomorrow.

Tia: Invite AJ.

The call ended, I looked at Hunter.

Me: Tell Seth we're no longer holding on anymore, we will figure the rest later on but right now, the positions have to go. I have to make a few calls.

I got up and walked dialling the number.

Me: Hey, this Mrs MJ Manona. Yeah the ex First Lady of the country. Remember those weapons my sister put in your care? We are going to need them.

Silence.

Me: Hello?

Voice: I'll need AJ to confirm that request, this is a military base, she's the one who put them here not you. She'll need to confirm that.

Me: I'll call her.

Voice: Do that.

I sighed, I called AJ again but she wasn't picking up. I called Ceasar.

Ceasar: Yeah.

Me: Hi, where is Avuyile?

Cesar: On her way to Italy.

Me: Huh?

Cesar: Your sister snapped, got in a flight to Milano as we speak.

Me: To?

Cesar: The Italian headquarters where else?

Me: Do you think she's going to kill someone?

Cesar: All the people involved in bombing the flat, simple.

Me: Oh God!

I dropped the call and walked back in the room.

Me: AJ is on her way to Italy.

Hunter: What?!

Me: She's going to kill people!

Kingston: When did she leave?

Me: Few hours ago.

Quinton: We need to stop that plane!

They all got up, dialling on their phones in a hurry. I just stood there watching them.

Me: Whatever you do,AJ will land in Milano tomorrow either way. None of us ever managed to stop her ever.

Hunter:This is war.

Me: You asked for help,there you go.

Hunter: You are not worried that they already know that she's going there?

Me:Ohh trust me, she's the only person who can go anywhere and you wouldn't know unless she tells you. I am just going to go and check on her kids.

✓ GENESIS 15

UNGOWAM MANONA

A knock echoed.

Me:Come in.

Flowers stepped in first in the room,I looked at the person confused.

Man: Delivery for Miss Ungowam Manona.

I looked at the flowers in shock.

Me:Uhm thanks.

My colleagues were peeking at the flowers,there were two hundred notes rolled between the flowers,chocolates, biscuits and sweets. I took them.

Me:Take pictures.

He took my phone,I didn't pose I just stared at the bouquet in shock and surprise. I couldn't believe it actually,I looked again and I wanted to cry. My phone rang,he handed it over.

Me:Hello?

Genesis:I assume you have your flowers.

Me:Yes.

Genesis:Are you alright?

Me:This is far the nicest thing a man has ever done for me.

Genesis: Don't eat too much candy.

Me:Thank you.

Genesis: You are welcome. Have a good day liefie.

My heart was swirling as I looked at the flowers. My editor walked in.

Editor:Well someone is loved.

Me:Yeah,I sent the story through the email.

Editor: I was surprised that you did everything so easily.

Me:I tried my best actually.

Editor: You were outstanding Miss Manona, keep it up.

She walked out, Genesis literally handed everything to me. I really didn't know what was going on but I liked it.



I walked to the door and unlocked,I stepped inside the house and I put my flowers in a vase. I turned the lights in the kitchen only to realise that someone was in my dining room,I froze and took out my phone slowly.

Voice: Don't do that.

I paused and turned to look at the person. Louis De Luca sat on the chair looking at me, I looked at him confused.

Me: I did what you asked me to do, now what do you want from me?

Louis: How dangerous is your aunt?

Me: Which one?

Louis: AJ.

Me: According to her victims, very.

Louis: Where is she?

Me: In her house? I don't know.

Louis: No she's not, your aunt just went undetected.

Me: Huh?

Louis: Your aunt is holding my family hostage.

Me: Heh? Tell me that you are lying.

Louis: I can't get to her kids nor will she answer even if I say that I have you.

Me: Is this some sort of joke?

Louis: She wants all the founders with her in 48 hours especially me.

Me: What do you want?

Louis: Write about it.

Me: That's easy.

Louis: If anything happens to my kids and wife just know your whole family is good as dead.

I just stood, he got up and left. I called my mother.

Me: Mom.

Mom: Hey baby.

I felt bad knowing what I did the last time I saw her.

Me: I am so sorry.

Mom: You were expressing yourself, what is unacceptable is you being disrespectful about it. I'm not a commander, I'm not the First Lady anymore, have no position that gives me power to do something about this. Yes I feel guilty about it, at the same time I have to be selfish for you guys. I made enemies who are waiting to strike, of course they will go for my kids. Just because you see me doing nothing doesn't mean that I don't want to.

Me: I'm really sorry.

Mom: It's okay.

Me: Where is Aunt AJ?

Mom:Milano I think.

Me: Holding Louis De Luca's family hostage and about to hold the founders hostage too.

Mom: Obviously, they almost killed Fleur.

Me:Heh?

Mom:She snapped, that's all I can tell you. Look I have to check up on Kveta and Leilani.

Me:Bye.

AJ

Me:I was doing just fine.

The woman looked at me in fear.

Me:Are you scared?

She nodded.

Me:Be very scared,if your husband and the founders try something you and your kids die.

Mrs De Luca: Don't you have kids?

Me: Your husband almost bombed my daughter, whatever speech you have it won't work.

Mrs De Luca:He loves kids.

Me:Then ask him why my kids?Now if you keep talking,one child dies do we understand each other?

She nodded. I got up and looked at the pictures on the wall.

Me: Funny,I don't know what your husband was thinking you know. I'm a Prophetess in the making,out of the blue you are turning me back to that. Can't they just leave me alone?

Rio walked in.

Rio: They are here.

Me:Let them in.

Soon they all walked in carrying four briefcases, they all sat down.

Louis:Lucia-

Me:Stay right there and keep quiet.

Louis:This-

Me:For trying to harm my daughter!Now you have my full attention what do you want?

They looked at each other.

Santos:Signora Zarkina vogliamo tutto ciò che ci appartiene, vogliamo che le sedie restituiscano contemporaneamente e ci

fermiamo. Sfortunatamente Louis ha usato il tuo nome in modo sbagliato, volevamo fare un patto con te. Ci prendi la mafia, facciamo come vuoi.[Mrs Zarkina we want everything that belongs to us,we want the chairs returned simultaneously and we'll stop. Unfortunately Louis used your name in a wrong manner,we wanted to make a deal with you. You get us the mafia,we do as you want.]

They all nodded,I looked at them unwavering.

Louis:We should learn to speak in English

Advertisement

she's-

Me: Se avessi voluto un traduttore, ne avrei portato uno. Perché credi che ti aiuterò? E se oggi fosse il tuo ultimo giorno?[If I wanted a translator,I would have brought one. Why do you believe that I will help you? What if today is your last day?]

Now they looked uncomfortable.

Santos: We're prepared to make the deal.

Me:Pay for everything you have burnt,get your men infiltrating my security and stay as far as possible from the country. Can you do that?I mean you don't even know how I came here

undetected,so I don't think you want to find out how I can kill you and no one would notice.

They looked at each other.

Louis:Well how can you get the mafia back.

Me:Easy,give me the laptop.

I hesitated but then I realised that I wasn't going to protect them any longer. I typed in silence, they were watching me.

Me:De Luca don't try anything that could get your kids killed,I am bitter.

He paused.

Me:Now they are officially removed from their seats.

They looked at the laptop in shock.

Me:Transfer every cent to the right account to fix the mess you made,but,but someone is going to die.

I pulled my gun and shot De Luca on the head.

Me:Now you know,I will be back if you defy my orders.

Santos: We just made a deal!

Me: I am just collecting debts for trying to kill me and my kids, your wife is preparing dinner as we speak so be a darling and

don't speak to me in that manner. Anyone else?Rio take the briefcases.

The wife was crying hysterically.

Me:Oh come on don't make me shut you for good.

She covered her mouth.

Me:Ohh guys you work for me now with me,if I say jump do because I am keeping track of everything and everyone. Ciao.

I got up and walked to the door.

SETH SANCHEZ

My phone was buzzing repeatedly as I looked at my laptop,red and blinking buttons covered the entire screen. I finally picked it up.

Me:Dad.

Dad: What just happened?

Me:We were forced throughout our own system, someone hacked it. Someone had control of our system and we didn't even know.

All TV's were showing the system, nothing else, clearly showing that we were no longer part of the Italian mafia. I didn't know what to say or do,I just stared in shock.

Dad:AJ.

Me:I want to give her the benefit of the doubt but she's the only person capable of doing this, just didn't think she would make it public.

I tried using my codes but it kept saying access denied, every enemy, every corner of the world was seeing this pandemic and our names were on the screen. I kept looking at the screen in confusion.

Kayise:Seth what is going on?

Me: It's over.

I pulled my hair.

Kayise: What happened?

Me: I don't know but there was an override in the system, I don't know what happened. No one saw anything, someone had access to the main core system but no one knew. Was it that weak?

I kept typing but it hit back with access denied.

Kayise:We-

My phone vibrated, I looked at the screen, I blinked and looked again. I picked it up.

Me:De Luca?

Voice: He's dead, this is Antonio Santos new boss of the Italian mafia. I am sure you have seen that we sent the money including extra to rebuild everything we have destroyed. The bank, we sent Niva Black for the firm, Mrs Zarkina for the apartment. Again there's extra just in case.

Me: How did you do it?

Voice: Desperate measures had to be taken against those who have gotten used in leaving against the rules and regulations of our organisation. Now Sanchez's, Blacks, well Kingstons were never Italian, they were buy ins, are no longer part of this. Each every person now knows, do not try to get your chairs back, it won't end well. In case you are wondering, the world is listening to this. You stay out of our way, you get to live and face the enemies you made. Lovely chatting with you.

I closed my eyes for a moment, the call ended.

Me: Aunt AJ really does hate everyone.

Kayise: She did this?

Me: Now I am sure she did, De Luca is dead and somehow I have a feeling she now has control of everything.

✓ GENESIS 16

FLEUR

Amahle: I'm not so in the mood for a weird car.

I looked at her.

Me:Second hand is best so you can learn something about taking care of your car.

Amahle: We're standing in front of them.

Me: I am not the one paying for the car.

Amahle smacked me.

Me:Ouch.

Amahle: Choose.

Me:The polo you miserable piece of shit!

Amahle: We'll take that,thanks.

I looked at her shocked,my family was waiting patiently since we were in Trenius. Locomotion echoed behind us as we stood there,I looked behind and paused.

Amahle:Well look who just stepped in.

Me:Kaley.

The woman flaunted her blonde hair as she walked towards us, she paused to see us looking at her.

Kaley: Fleur ahh!

Me: Don't touch me.

Amahle: Me too.

Everyone around looked at us confused.

Kaley: Still bitter?

Me: Bitter me? You tried to bully me with your ribs popping out of your skin girrrl.

I flicked her blonde hair, her face fell.

Amahle: Her face almost melted but people are watching.

Kaley: A new lapdog? She's cute.

Amahle: Lap bitch don't be classy about.

Voice: Miss Selana do you want to test your car?

Amahle: Oh yes please.

Me: Nice to meet you Kaley looking starved as always.

Amahle: Actually can we sign so we can leave?

Kaley literally stormed out. We laughed as she walked out.

Me: Trenius though is a mess.

Amahle signed everything and we left,headed to my house. Funny my guards dispersed yesterday immediately without telling me why. I could feel excitement as I directed Amahle to my house,I could already see it.

Amahle: You are so excited!

Me: I'm going to see my Mommy, Daddy,Ash, Leilani and Kveta. I've missed them so much.

The moment she parked,I was out of the car running to the house.

Me:Mamas!

I ran in the house and jumped on my mother sitting on the couch,my siblings followed.

Dad: Ridiculous!

Mom:Hello to you too Aurora,now get off me.

Me:Guys move!

Leilani:Big sis!

I hugged her.

Mom:Amahle hello.

Amahle: Hello Ma,very rude Fleur.

Mom:By now it's pretty obvious how she behaves here.

My mother's phone rang,the music stopped playing. She looked at the screen and tapped.

Mom:Who is this?

MJ:Some-thing horrible happened. Have you seen the news?

Mom:Uhm no.

She grabbed the remote,now we all wanted to see what just happened.

Mom:Oh God!

We all stood there in horror,I kept blinking hoping that I was just dreaming,I pinched the skin between my fingers but I was wide awake. I looked again and sat down,my mother still sat looking at the news in horror.

News:The famous and well-known couple has been reported dead on the scene,their daughter was rushed to the hospital. The police just arrived, let me get a quick word-

My mother turned the TV off. No one talked at all,on the other side Aunt MJ was crying hysterically. I just didn't know what to say,no one seemed to have any strength to suggest anything. Everyone was in their own world.

GENESIS

Me:It was nice doing business with you.

They nodded,I looked at the time,I still had some hours to drive back to Trenius with the internet service bad in this place,I wanted to fly. I shook their hands and went to my car,I had to be in my house as soon as possible. Just as I drove out of the town,my phone buzzed and I looked at the screen. I grinned as i looked at the messages,I connected the phone and called her.

Ungowam: I'm never taking a day off,the way I am so bored you would swear I am out of my mind.

I chuckled.

Me: You are dramatic.

Ungowam: You don't understand,I am in this house thinking about how I can spend my day.

Me:And I will be home in the evening. I could give you a massage.

Ungowam:I would love that.

I listened to her blabbering about everything she could have done during the day and all of the things that bored her. I just laughed as she continued buzzing.

Voice: Incoming call from Mom.

I rejected it.

Me:Can I call you when I arrive in Trenius?I just need to get back to my mother.

Ungowam:Want anything to eat?

Me: You.

Ungowam: I'm not on the menu.

Me:Now you are. Bye.

I dropped the call,I called my mother back.

Mom:Where are you? I have been calling you for hours,what is wrong with you?Are you alright?

She sighed.

Mom:Where are you?

Me:Mrs calm down and tell me what happened?

She paused,she was going to lie.

Mom: I am just worried with everyone removed

Advertisement

I was scared when you didn't respond for this long.

Me: Don't worry Mom, everything is alright.

Mom:Call me when you are home.

Me:I will do. Is Xander awake?

Mom:I am here with him, he's awake, just bandaged.

Me:Dad?Brit?

Mom: They went back home.

Me:I will call you when I am home.

Mom:I love you okay?

Me:I love you too Mom.

The call ended, I looked at my phone in confusion and dialled Zane.

Zane:Bro.

Me: Where are you?

Zane: Driving from Varnia to Sentmayor,why?

Me:Have you talked to Xander?

Zane:Was on a call with him right now.

Me:Has anything happened?

Zane:Where?

Me:Anywhere.

Zane:I don't know anything serious.

Me:Mhm wait what were you doing in Varnia?

He laughed.

Zane:I was just going to talk to Nathan.

Me:Phone?

He laughed.

Zane:No I didn't see any girl.

I chuckled.

Me: You are still stalking the girl?

Zane:I saw her actually this time and she is Fleur Zarkina's best friend, might I add.

Me: You know that,might I add.

Zane:Girl doesn't like me obviously and her best friend wouldn't dream of going out with me.

Me:Why are you sure?I was sure.

Zane:Sure about who?

Me: I'm your big brother, don't ask me personal questions.

He laughed.

Zane: Leave me alone bro.

He dropped the call,I laughed.

AJ

I sat down on the floor in my shorts and vest, I looked at the wall then down. My Bible and books everywhere in the room, a knock echoed.

Cesar: Honey the kids ended up sleeping.

Me: Okay go ahead, I'll continue here.

Cesar: You do understand that it is not your fault?

Me: Ohh I know that I am not responsible, but I feel pain for the first time and I don't know how to handle it.

I looked at my hands.

Cesar: Let me in.

Me: "Dear God, the one who holds my head up high, the one that loves me even though I am undeserving. You are good. Help me hold onto that on the days that I hurt. You are the one and only who has never left my side, though I complain when they leave mine. Oh, my heart hurts to think about how you feel! I hear you when you tell me to "be still and know that you are God. I am done choosing people over you, my God. Please hold onto my heart. Please let no one, not even myself, hurt it anymore to the point of losing hope. I am begging you to hold it close to yours until you and I are ready to give it to someone. Lord, You have blessed me beyond what I deserve. Please help me love you first. Above anger, above pride, above rage, above attention, above love, above doubt, above money, above

people, above work, above school, above the church, above everything. I would not have anything if it was not for you providing every step of the way. Help me remember this. You love me with all your heart.. this is standing out to me more than anything.. I want to love others just like you love us, undeserving. Even when I get hurt, please oh God."

Cesar:Amen.

I opened the door,he pulled me to a hug.

Me: I did what I did to protect my kids and it's paying. I'm a Prophetess!

Cesar: You are not perfect.

Me:Yeah I am not but three kids have lost their parents in a single heartbeat and I can't be happy. What does that make me?Aliza and Hunter are dead.

✓ GENESIS 18

FLEUR

Me:Worst funeral!

I think I said that too loud forgetting that I was in class, everyone looked at me. I banged my head on the table.

Amahle:Fleur.

Me:Mhm.

Nathan:Do you want some air Miss Zarkina? You have been in your world for some time now.

I looked at him and sighed.

Me:I am fine.

I looked at down,he continued teaching and I drifted again. Suddenly the class was over,I got up..

Nathan:Miss Zarkina.

I turned.

Nathan:A moment please.

Amahle: I'll quickly go get us something to eat,, I'll be back.

I walked back to his table.

Nathan:Are you alright?

I looked at him.

Me: You don't really have to pretend like you care about my feelings,I am still AJ's daughter nothing is going to change that or will ever change it. Now if you don't mind, I would like to leave.

Nathan:Sit down.

I squinted my eyes at him.

Nathan:Fleur sit down!

I chuckled.

Me: I am not moved Dr Black,make me.

Nathan:Do you have to be so stubborn?

I grinned.

Me:Ooh yes.

He got up and stood right before me.

Nathan:Please sit down.

Me:No.

He looked at me,well watched me like he was trying to understand something. It was weird,out of the blue he grabbed my arms and pushed me down then sat on the table.

Nathan:Was that hard?

Me:Very,I feel like I broke a bone, I'm getting old don't you understand that?I need to plan before sitting down.

He laughed showing his white teeth.

Nathan: You are something else do you know that?

Me:I am the best..

I was trying to whip my hair only to cover my face with the hair,he burst out laughing as he removed the hair from my face. Funny his hands looked rough but were soft as he moved my hair to place,patting it and fixing. He looked so serious brushed the hair off my face,then finally looked at my face. It was the most comfortable and uncomfortable action,no one said anything,with his hand on my face, other on my hair. Nothing came out of my mouth as we just stared at each other,my phone vibrated,he let go and I got up.

Me:I have to go.

He grabbed my hand..

Nathan:Look as your lecturer I have to be worried about you,all the lecturers said you are going through something and you are a top student. You can book a therapist or just talk to me,it might help.

Me:Why would you want to help me?I mean it's me Fleur.

Nathan:That funeral taught everyone a valuable lesson plus you are too beautiful to be frowning.

I could have felt as I turned to look at him,he was already looking at his papers. It sure felt like I heard him wrong,he looked up and smiled.

Nathan:Is there something that you want to share Miss Zarkina.

Me: You are making me sound like I am hearing things.

Nathan: What did you hear?

Me: You said that I am too beautiful.

Nathan:Do you not agree?

I looked at him with my mouth open,my phone vibrated again so I just walked out. I laughed as I picked up the call.

Amahle:Where are you?

Me: I'm on my way.

I literally turned and laughed.

Me: Men.

GENESIS

I dialled the number again and it rang unanswered. I sighed before sitting down,I called again.

Voice:Miss Ungowam Manona's phone hello?

Me:Uhm hi,where is she?

Voice:She forgot the phone on the charger but I can give you another number you can reach her from.

Me:That would be nice.

Voice:Do you a paper and a pen?

I grabbed the paper and pen,the woman called out the numbers.

Me::Thank you.

Voice: Welcome.

I dialled the number,it rang..

Ungowam:Hello?

I paused.

Ungowam: It must be the signal again, should have brought my phone. Can you hear me?

Me:Hi.

She took a deep breath.

Ungowam:I really appreciate don't want to fight with anyone Genesis,I am not interested in understanding why you tried to kill my brother. So you were just using me?

Me: If that's what you believe then there's nothing to talk about.

Ungowam: Ohh there's nothing to talk about, nothing is going to change that you could have murdered my brother while fucking me.

Me: Did it look like I was fucking you?

Ungowam: Do enlighten me then?

Me: I will say this again, I made love-

Ungowam: Stop. Are you done?

Me: I'll let you calm down and think everything through

Advertisement

if by any chance you think you feel nothing for me then clearly you are stupid.

Ungowam: Gene-

Me: You don't want to talk, I will talk. I resent your brother so much if I were given another chance, I would kill him. Xander got injured because I asked him to spy on your brother not try to kill him. Your brother of course thinks he was trying to kill him, unfortunate. You let me do everything I did to you knowing very well what I am capable of. Why are you acting

surprised that your family and mine are trying to kill each other?

She didn't respond.

Me:I expect you in my house this evening, we're going to talk about this one way or the other. You will not walk away everytime there's a conflict with me,do you understand me?

She didn't respond.

Me: Don't make me track you.

Ungowam:I understand.

Me:If you dare not show up,if I were you I wouldn't attempt that. Next time we have a problem, don't ever drop your phone or ignore my calls. Do you understand that I have been struggling to sleep knowing someone is in pain because of me?Better not be late Ungowam.

I dropped the call,I took deep breaths,I promised myself not to be angry but here I was because of a woman.

Me:Fuck.

I called again.

Ungowam:Hello.

Me:Look I am not going to kill you okay?I am just not good with overwhelming emotions,fuck.

I'm even explaining myself.

Me: Look, I want you and I am not willing to be just one of your boyfriends. I promise not to be angry when you are here. Have a good day.

I groaned.

Voice: Now you know.

I turned to look at my father standing at the door.

Dad: Women are the most frustrating beings, so emotional unstable, you get angry she starts crying.

Me: Tell me about it, this one thinks I was just using her.

My father laughed.

Me: What?

Dad: You love her don't you?

Me: You are my father, I'd rather talk to Mom about being in love.

He chuckled.

Dad: A Bilson just doesn't give up on the woman they love, I had to give your mother years to think everything through not that I stopped trying. I was trying to make her see that I am willing to be there for her, not easy but here we are.

Me: See this one? She thinks I'll just understand that she's angry and need space from me, she can have space here this house is too big. Talking about the house-

Dad: We're standing leaving in an hour, don't worry.

Me: If I die just know it's a woman.

TIA PETRA

Zak: He's in love.

Me: Can we pass MJ's house?

He looked at me.

Zak: Have you thought this through love?

Me: Yeah.

He drove in silence but I knew that I didn't think anything through at all. We finally reached the house, we walked out, the security just signed us in and then we walked to the front door. I knocked, someone opened the door letting me inside, we walked in and it was a housekeeper.

Woman: They are this way.

We walked to the sitting room, MJ, Lisa, Candy, Endy, Zac, Dante and others. I didn't know if we had to bow considering it was the King and Queen of England.

Candy:Ohh you don't have to.

MJ:I want to know what you are doing in my house though.

Me:I am here to apologize for the part I played in the funeral,I should have refrained and I didn't. It won't change the mess but I am sorry.

MJ: Your apology changes nothing,I have never tried to kill your children but somehow somewhere yours tried.

Me:Uhm what are you talking about?

MJ:Ow please don't tell me you think Xander was attacked?Ohh my you do,ask him. Otherwise in this house your apology bounces like a fully pumped ball. Wait that is what AJ did? Asked for forgiveness while you drugged her and trapped her in an asylum. I'm not accepting, just like you failed,if you think because you see now you were wrong doesn't mean you will be forgiven. Karma right?I don't have any reason to forgive you.

✓ GENESIS 18

FLEUR

Me:Worst funeral!

I think I said that too loud forgetting that I was in class, everyone looked at me. I banged my head on the table.

Amahle:Fleur.

Me:Mhm.

Nathan:Do you want some air Miss Zarkina? You have been in your world for some time now.

I looked at him and sighed.

Me:I am fine.

I looked at down,he continued teaching and I drifted again. Suddenly the class was over,I got up..

Nathan:Miss Zarkina.

I turned.

Nathan:A moment please.

Amahle: I'll quickly go get us something to eat,
I'll be back.

I walked back to his table.

Nathan:Are you alright?

I looked at him.

Me: You don't really have to pretend like you care about my feelings, I am still AJ's daughter nothing is going to change that or will ever change it. Now if you don't mind, I would like to leave.

Nathan:Sit down.

I squinted my eyes at him.

Nathan:Fleur sit down!

I chuckled.

Me: I am not moved Dr Black, make me.

Nathan:Do you have to be so stubborn?

I grinned.

Me:Ooh yes.

He got up and stood right before me.

Nathan:Please sit down.

Me:No.

He looked at me,well watched me like he was trying to understand something. It was weird,out of the blue he grabbed my arms and pushed me down then sat on the table.

Nathan:Was that hard?

Me:Very,I feel like I broke a bone, I'm getting old don't you understand that?I need to plan before sitting down.

He laughed showing his white teeth.

Nathan: You are something else do you know that?

Me:I am the best..

I was trying to whip my hair only to cover my face with the hair,he burst out laughing as he removed the hair from my face. Funny his hands looked rough but were soft as he moved my hair to place, patting it and fixing. He looked so serious brushed the hair off my face,then finally looked at my face. It was the most comfortable and uncomfortable action,no one said anything,with his hand on my face, other on my hair. Nothing came out of my mouth as we just stared

at each other, my phone vibrated, he let go and I got up.

Me: I have to go.

He grabbed my hand. .

Nathan: Look as your lecturer I have to be worried about you, all the lecturers said you are going through something and you are a top student. You can book a therapist or just talk to me, it might help.

Me: Why would you want to help me? I mean it's me Fleur.

Nathan: That funeral taught everyone a valuable lesson plus you are too beautiful to be frowning.

I could have felt as I turned to look at him, he was already looking at his papers. It sure felt like I heard him wrong, he looked up and smiled.

Nathan: Is there something that you want to share Miss Zarkina.

Me: You are making me sound like I am hearing things.

Nathan: What did you hear?

Me: You said that I am too beautiful.

Nathan:Do you not agree?

I looked at him with my mouth open,my phone vibrated again so I just walked out. I laughed as I picked up the call.

Amahle:Where are you?

Me: I'm on my way.

I literally turned and laughed.

Me: Men.

GENESIS

I dialled the number again and it rang unanswered. I sighed before sitting down,I called again.

Voice:Miss Ungowam Manona's phone hello?

Me:Uhm hi,where is she?

Voice:She forgot the phone on the charger but I can give you another number you can reach her from.

Me:That would be nice.

Voice:Do you a paper and a pen?

I grabbed the paper and pen, the woman called out the numbers.

Me: Thank you.

Voice: Welcome.

I dialled the number, it rang..

Ungowam: Hello?

I paused.

Ungowam: It must be the signal again, should have brought my phone. Can you hear me?

Me: Hi.

She took a deep breath.

Ungowam: I really appreciate don't want to fight with anyone Genesis, I am not interested in understanding why you tried to kill my brother. So you were just using me?

Me: If that's what you believe then there's nothing to talk about.

Ungowam: Ohh there's nothing to talk about, nothing is going to change that you could have murdered my brother while fucking me.

Me: Did it look like I was fucking you?

Ungowam: Do enlighten me then?

Me: I will say this again, I made love-

Ungowam: Stop. Are you done?

Me: I'll let you calm down and think everything through

Advertisement

if by any chance you think you feel nothing for me then clearly you are stupid.

Ungowam: Gene-

Me: You don't want to talk, I will talk. I resent your brother so much if I were given another chance, I would kill him. Xander got injured because I asked him to spy on your brother not try to kill him. Your brother of course thinks he was trying to kill him, unfortunate. You let me do everything I did to you knowing very well what I am capable of. Why are you acting surprised that your family and mine are trying to kill each other?

She didn't respond.

Me:I expect you in my house this evening, we're going to talk about this one way or the other. You will not walk away everytime there's a conflict with me, do you understand me?

She didn't respond.

Me: Don't make me track you.

Ungowam:I understand.

Me:If you dare not show up, if I were you I wouldn't attempt that. Next time we have a problem, don't ever drop your phone or ignore my calls. Do you understand that I have been struggling to sleep knowing someone is in pain because of me?Better not be late Ungowam.

I dropped the call, I took deep breaths, I promised myself not to be angry but here I was because of a woman.

Me:Fuck.

I called again.

Ungowam:Hello.

Me: Look I am not going to kill you okay? I am just not good with overwhelming emotions, fuck.

I'm even explaining myself.

Me: Look, I want you and I am not willing to be just one of your boyfriends. I promise not to be angry when you are here. Have a good day.

I groaned.

Voice: Now you know.

I turned to look at my father standing at the door.

Dad: Women are the most frustrating beings, so emotional unstable, you get angry she starts crying.

Me: Tell me about it, this one thinks I was just using her.

My father laughed.

Me: What?

Dad: You love her don't you?

Me: You are my father, I'd rather talk to Mom about being in love.

He chuckled.

Dad: A Bilson just doesn't give up on the woman they love, I had to give your mother years to think everything through not that I stopped trying. I was trying to make her see that I am willing to be there for her, not easy but here we are.

Me: See this one? She thinks I'll just understand that she's angry and need space from me, she can have space here this house is too big. Talking about the house—

Dad: We're standing leaving in an hour, don't worry.

Me: If I die just know it's a woman.

TIA PETRA

Zak: He's in love.

Me: Can we pass MJ's house?

He looked at me.

Zak: Have you thought this through love?

Me: Yeah.

He drove in silence but I knew that I didn't think anything through at all. We finally reached the

house, we walked out, the security just signed us in and then we walked to the front door. I knocked, someone opened the door letting me inside, we walked in and it was a housekeeper.

Woman: They are this way.

We walked to the sitting room, MJ, Lisa, Candy, Endy, Zac, Dante and others. I didn't know if we had to bow considering it was the King and Queen of England.

Candy: Ohh you don't have to.

MJ: I want to know what you are doing in my house though.

Me: I am here to apologize for the part I played in the funeral, I should have refrained and I didn't. It won't change the mess but I am sorry.

MJ: Your apology changes nothing, I have never tried to kill your children but somehow somewhere yours tried.

Me: Uhm what are you talking about?

MJ: Ow please don't tell me you think Xander was attacked? Ohh my you do, ask him. Otherwise in this

house your apology bounces like a fully pumped ball.
Wait that is what AJ did? Asked for forgiveness
while you drugged her and trapped her in an asylum.
I'm not accepting, just like you failed, if you think
because you see now you were wrong doesn't mean you
will be forgiven. Karma right? I don't have any
reason to forgive you.

✓ GENESIS 19

UNGOWAM

I literally stood outside the door for a good five minutes before pushing the door opened. Genesis was already standing there, he hugged me and I found myself comfortable in his arms. He was actually surprised as I just enjoyed the moment.

Genesis: Please sit down.

I sat down.

Genesis: Say what you want?

Me: How do I trust you knowing very well that your family and mine are enemies?

Genesis: What option do you have?

I looked at him surprised.

Genesis: When you let him in your heart what the fuck were you expecting? Me to suddenly like your family or your siblings? Am I suppose to suddenly forget what they can do? Or were you just hoping to be one of my girls?

I was stunned as I looked at him.

Genesis:I am not about to fall in love, deeply,for someone who thinks ignoring me is the right way. You either want me or don't.

He sighed.

Genesis:I always had to be careful who I fall for until you came along and changed that. Do I want to chase you up and down?Yes but only if the feeling is mutual Ungowam. I don't know how this relationship is going to survive our families but I am not backing down just like that, I'm a Bilson after all.

Me:I am so scared,I keep asking myself why you?I can fall in love with anyone but I fell for you. How do I continue with you knowing what you have done huh?

Genesis: What I did was out of anger and I am sorry,I won't apologize to your brother,I won't be sleeping with one him.

Me:Then you see what I mean?

Genesis: I don't see what you mean,Micah is your brother, we'll deal with our problems alone. Our problem is you thinking a solution is ignoring someone,I am definitely not Muzi.

I looked at him.

Genesis: You are either with me or not with me.

Me:I want to be with you.

Genesis: Don't say but, I don't want to hear it or know that please.

Me: What are we going to do?

Genesis: I'll figure out something, I am in love with you and I am not going to be a stumbling rock you will just pass. Do we understand?

I nodded.

Genesis: Aren't you hungry? I cooked.

Oh lord he's really bipolar, he got up and walked to the kitchen. He came back with two plates and sat down.

Genesis: Look if you really don't feel the same don't string me along, just say so I'll definitely understand.

As if on cue my phone rang,, I looked at the screen then looked at Genesis.

Genesis: Answer it.

Me: Hello.

Wonga: I came to drop some things but you are not here, when are you coming back?

Me: I'll be back tomorrow.

Wonga: You left the gate open and didn't lock the house.

Me:I did what?!Is anything taken?

Wonga:So far nothing,were you in a hurry?

Me:I was distracted actually,oh God I left so carelessly.

Wonga:Since I don't have the main keys, I'll just wait til you come back.

Me: Okay thank you.

Wonga:Sure.

Genesis: Everything alright?

Me:I left my house and gate unlocked.

Genesis:Heh?!

Me:Yep.

Genesis:Who noticed?

I looked at him,he chuckled.

Genesis:The boyfriend that you can introduce to your family right?

Me: He was never my boyfriend.

Genesis: Like I am never going to be one right?

Me:Are you bipolar?Wonga might as well be my friend,we are not doing anything anymore not after you if that's your worry.

Genesis: Next time you raise your voice at me we'll have serious problems. The same guy you have been cheating with on your fiance right?

I looked at him.

Genesis:Noted, he's going to die anyway should tell him to leave your house.

With that he walked out with his food.

BRITNEY

First day at work??Amazing!! I thought they would have a problem with me but none of them treated weirdly. I looked at the drawings of my new designs,was worried about taking them to the office to be approved.

Voice: That's nice.

I jumped almost rolling off my chair

Advertisement

I steadied myself and looked at the person.

Me:Miss MJ-Mrs Jange,no Mrs Manona MJ.

She looked at me and chuckled.

MJ: I'm not scary.

Me:Yeah.

She grabbed my sketchbook and paged it.

Me:The latest are on the last few pages.

She just paged it then pulled out some pages,I stared in shock as she put them on the table well my old sketches to be exact.

Me:Those are not neat.

MJ:These describe you,the ones you were drawing were more likely to impress me and I don't like them. These are more inspired by Tiara Petea's taste in fashion aren't they?

Me: They are.

MJ: Don't ever try to impress me.

Me:Yes Mam.

MJ:Now I want to see the actual designs, perfection needs time but not too much of it.

Then she walked away,I watched her and almost screamed. I wanted to dance as I just stood there trying to contain my excitement. I heard footsteps and composed myself before jumping on my chair.

Voice:Uhm hi have you seen Mrs Manona?

I looked at the person only to gape,he was definitely one of the hottest guys I have never seen in my life. I looked at the

soldiers dressed in Britain armour in confusion,he still stared right at me.

Me:Uhm Mrs Manona.

Man: Don't mind the soldiers look at me.

I looked at him.

Man: Have you seen my aunt?

Me: She's in the office.

I looked as everyone bowed,my mind was trying to locate a lot of things like who was he.

Man: I am sure I'll trend for you to find out who I am.

Me:I stay away from social media because of that.

Man:I like you. Pri-I mean Keanu Luhle, just in case I have two lookalikes, I am a triplet.

Me:We have two pairs of twins at home,I can survive.

Keanu: Your name?

Me: Britney.

MJ was standing in the stairs watching.

MJ:Keanu.

Keanu:Aunt AJ!

He walked away leaving me out of breath. I just had no idea why he had British army with him. Was he a governmental official?

ZANE BILSON

I looked at the woman picking up the things from the aisle, I took a deep breath and walked towards her.

Me:Hey.

She looked at me.

Amahle:Hi.

She looked around.

Amahle:Uhm can I help you?

Me:I was hoping that I could talk to you but I don't know what to say right now.

Voice:He wants to take you out.

I turned and it was Fleur.

Me:Zarkina.

Fleur:Bilson. She said yes.

Amahle:I did?

Me:She did.

Fleur: You have been stalking her for sometime, you have the chance to talk to her,ask her why are you being slow?

Amahle: He's been doing what?

Fleur: I am joking,he wasn't stalking you my best love, he's just going to give me a R200 not to explain why I said that. Right Zane Bilson?

She extended her hand,yep I knew what that meant. Giving her money or she was going to tell on me,I gave her the money.

Fleur:Add some change.

Yeah she saw the money in my wallet,I gave her another.

Fleur:While talking,do get groceries I'm buying wine and snacks. Oh wait I am the snack.

Amahle:Not mine!

It was weirdly hilarious as I watched Fleur laugh,I think she must have lost her brain cells somewhere. She walked away.

Me: She's changed.

Amahle:Hey ever since she talked to Dr Black, she's been acting like that.

Me: Nathan?

Amahle:Yep. So what do you want to talk about?

Me:Uhm do you mind if we go out sometime?

She smiled.

Amahle:I don't mind if you don't.

Me:Yeah it's nothing serious.

Silence.

Me:Can I at least have your number?

Amahle:Okay cool.

She typed her number and saved it,my phone rang.

Me:Excuse me. Hello?

Voice:Hey.

Me:Alicia?

Alicia:We need to talk.

Me: About?

Alicia: I'm pregnant.

Me:And?Is the father denying the child?

Alicia: It's yours.

Me:Okay please do share.

Alicia:The condoms were popped apparently and I just found out from-

Me:How?I bought them!

Alicia:I popped them.

Me:Get rid of it then, don't call me.

✓ GENESIS 20

UNKNOWN

Me:Move!

They jumped and got in the truck.

Gaba:Boss!

I looked at him,he pointed on the newspaper.

Me: What is this?

Gaba:Hunter Sanchez is dead.

Me:Heh?

I looked again on the front page.

Me: When?

Gaba:A week ago.

Me:Who killed him?

Gaba: There's no proof of who is responsible actually but other cartels are thinking it's Black Catalina.

Me:Well thanks to her,move this shipment and get my car so I can go back to South Africa. Hunter bloody Sanchez is dead,which means only Black and Kingston are still alive.

I chuckled.

Gaba:Sir,rumour has it that AJ is responsible for their removal.

I looked at him.

Me:Why would AJ help them?

Gaba:I don't think it's like that sir.

Me:Why would AJ help the Italians?

Gaba:I don't know sir.

Me:I pay you to know don't I?

Voice:Anger isn't healthy.

I turned to look at the woman.

Me:Now you out of all people should never be here.

Catalina:Even if I walk in a valley of darkness,my God would never forsake me.

Me:Preach Catalina preach.

Catalina:We have a problem.

Me:We?

Catalina: Somehow we're the top suspects in the murder of Hunter,Aliza and Natasha Sanchez.

Me:I have been in Mozambique for 20 years because Sanchez and his buddies killed my family.

Catalina:Yet we are the prime suspects.

Me:We or you?

Catalina:I did kill Erin Sanchez didn't I?

Me: They weren't protected and you are the only person capable of pulling that off aren't you?

Catalina:I was hoping that you understand what I meant but obviously I am wrong.

Me: Understand what?

Catalina:A lot of cartels want revenge on the Italians ourselves especially Blacks and Kingstons,not to mention Tia Petra.

Me:Let me guess you are responsible for Hunter's death aren't you?

Catalina: Your brain is fast.

Me:Look I lost my wife,my children and mother because of Sanchez,I am sure his son isn't going to lie back and let you live.

Catalina: They did a number on you didn't they? You are here acting like I killed your cat or you are so scared?Poor guy.

Me: What do you want from me?

Catalina: To cause rampage in Trenius and get my revenge on the Italians,I am going to show them that won't stop till all of them are dead.

I looked at her.

Me:AJ-

Catalina:If she thinks I am a small fry she can try me, we'll be see.

BRITNEY

I packed my things and walked out of the office heading to my car,I was surprised to find Keanu leaning on my car looking at his phone.

Me:Excuse me.

He looked at me.

Keanu: Almost thought you wouldn't come out.

Me:Can I help you?

Keanu:I was hoping that you would join me on misery and drink coffee with me.

Me: I'm actually tired.

Keanu: I don't feel happy,I am sad because my Mother couldn't make it.

Me: You are not going to let me leave without right?

Keanu:It is just coffee unless you want to lie naked in my room,we can arrange that I am keen.

Me:Oh no I am not that desperate, it's nothing serious.

Keanu: Don't be defensive, you will get sex some day hopefully sooner with all that anger. My car is this way.

He grabbed my hand,I was still stunned by his response and led me to his car. We got in and he drove to Trenius Gardens.

Me: You are British?

Keanu:The accent huh?

Me:Yep

Advertisement

which means that you are just here in this country for holiday or something.

Keanu: Something like that.

Me:Long distance relationships aren't my thing and I am not interested in moving somewhere for a man.

Keanu: You think you will be pressured to move? So you do like me, interesting. Aren't you going to ask about me?

Me: Are you a governmental official?

He chuckled.

Keanu: My sister is basically the government but that's a story for another day.

Me: I'm Britney Dellisantro.

Keanu: That's Spanish, are you?

Me: Grandfather died before he could take grandmother to Spain, so the family had no reason to move anymore. We're here because of that.

Keanu: My mom is from here, considering we're still getting to know each other, I'll tell you as time goes by.

Me: How long do you plan on staying here?

I chuckled.

Keanu: I thought you don't like me anymore Britney.

Me: Oh come on, maybe I just want to be troubled with you.

Keanu: This girl, I am not troubled.

Me: I am an angel.

Keanu: I like you.

Me:I like me too hey.

He chuckled.

AMAHLE

I woke up sweating and looked around. Fleur wasn't on the bed,I grabbed my phone and looked at the time. It was past one in the morning,I got out of bed and walked out of the room.

Me:Aurora!

Fleur: What's wrong?

She jumped off the window pane and looked at me, turning the lights on.

Me:Why were you sitting on the window pane?

Fleur: I just couldn't sleep actually, I'm thinking about school actually. I have a presentation and I did not prepare.

Me: You are never that stressed about school Fleur.

I looked at her.

Fleur:Uhm Dr Black keeps dropping me off..

Me:I noticed.

Fleur:Sent me a message,offering to pick me up in the morning.

Me:This is serious.

Fleur:I said yes because I promised my mother not to be rude anymore,it feels like someone ripped me apart.

I looked at her.

Fleur: He's old, he's married and about to have a child. I like him.

Me:Now that is worse than I expected.

Fleur: You think?I don't want anything to do with him but how do I avoid him?

Me:Well it means no more shuttles,we take the car.

Fleur:I don't want to like him,side chick vibes aren't for me.

Me:Who knew that you would like an old guy like him?

Fleur:Says the one liking Zane Bilson,the famous quiet player out of the brothers.

Me: Don't tell me, I don't trust him one bit.

Fleur:But if you are meant to be heartbroken then it's your turn baby shower girl.

✓ GENESIS 21

UNGOWAM

Genesis: You are up early.

Me: I made coffee.

He looked at me before taking the cup.

Genesis: Thank you.

A knock echoed, he continued looking at his cup.

Me: Aren't you going to respond?

Genesis: No one ever really knocks here.

I heard the front door open and a guy I didn't know walked in, he looked at me. Genesis turned and gasped..

Genesis: Bro! Where do you come from?

The guy chuckled and hugged Genesis, what confused me he looked black just so damn white.

Genesis:: Last time you were in Australia, when did you come back? What are you doing here in this country?

Guy:: Calm down, introduce me to your girl first.

Genesis: Babe, this is my cousin Zenam Petra.

Me::Hi.

Zenam:Zanana is the nickname actually,most preferred name.

Genesis:This is the love of my life,strange, Ungowam Manona.

Zenam: I'm surprised that she doesn't know me.

Me:Uhm do you know me?

Zenam: Your mother is my aunt right? Zinnia Manona is my mother.

Me: I'm one of the youngest Manonas, have met your mother once didn't know that she's married to a Petra.

Genesis::Manonas and Petras are actually friends.

Me:I am a Manona and I am nowhere being friends with the Petras.

Genesis:Yet you are going to marry Tia Petra's son.

I had no come back,I just looked at him.

Zenam:I am actually staying around here for sometime.

Genesis: Have you seen the family?

Zenam:My parents, Brandon and his lovely wife,I am suppose to meet her parents too. Apparently, in order for me to use a certain land I have to talk to Uncle Zac as the oldest child.

Me:My father is not here at the moment, he'll be back next week.

My phone rang,I looked at the phone.

Me:Phiwe?

Phiwe: What is going on?

Me:Where?

Phiwe: Ungowam where are you?

Me: I'm in town.

Phiwe:What were you doing last night?

Me:I didn't sleep in my house,Wonga slept there.

Phiwe: Security called me last night,the police have been here since last night.

Me:What?Why?

Phiwe:A dead body.

I looked at Genesis only to realise that my phone is on speaker.

Me: I'm coming.

Genesis:I did tell you that Muzi is stalking you didn't I?

Me:Muzi killed Wonga?

Genesis:Yes.

Me:I am going to be on the spotlight, do you understand that?

Genesis: Don't go there,if the police think you are responsible there's a camera across the street. It shows what time you left.

Me:Wonga-

Genesis: Isn't none of your business or unless he is. You go there, you become the prime suspect.

Zenam:Take it from the medical examiner, he's telling the truth.

Genesis:Plus I don't want to be alone in this house.

I rolled my eyes.

Zenam:Let me love and leave you bro.

They hugged each other,my phone just started buzzing. I couldn't wrap my head around the fact someone was dead in my house and I wasn't there. I jumped when I felt a hand on my neck.

Genesis: Sometimes showing concern makes you guilty,we are in a time where we are fighting enemies and they could use you to get to your mother. The police will find a way to talk to you if they want answers.

Me:Do I want to stay in that house?No, someone is dead.

Genesis:Muzi is angry and is one of the men who will do anything to kill you if you leave him,well like me.

I turned,he grinned.

Genesis:I am Joking,if you want to leave me I won't stalk you okay?Look right now my house is better,it has you.

Me: Seriously Genesis?

He grinned.

Genesis: I'm taking an opportunity to keep you and get a lot of sex until I don't feel the need to leave my room ever.

Me:With whose coochie?

Didn't he grab me between my legs?I gasped.

Genesis:Ours.

Me:Let me go.

I wanted to grab him but he jumped back laughing.

Genesis:I need a favour though.

Me: With?

Genesis:Amahle Selana.

Me:Uhm who is that??

Genesis: Alicia Rhodes.

Me:Uhm-

Genesis: Amahle Selana is Fleur Aurora Zarkina's best friend,Zane likes her so much.

I looked at him.

Me: You want me to convince who exactly?

Genesis:Fleur-

Me:A nightmare,the last time we talked she almost burnt me with boiled water Genesis.

Genesis: You are joking?

Me:I said something and she almost threw boiled water at me. Fleur is her mother's daughter Genesis and she doesn't like anyone especially me.

Genesis:Zane will figure something out. Alicia Rhodes popped my brother's condom and got herself pregnant. Now she wants him involved.

Me: That is wow.

Genesis:Zane doesn't want a baby with her

Advertisement

now if this gets to the news before she does then everyone will understand.

Me: You want it trend?

Genesis:We have the conversation and call records proving this if you think I am joking.

Me:She was desperate.

Genesis:To force someone to be a father?I use a condom for a reason,you decide to pop them how is that my problem?If I want a child,I will tell you.

Me:Do you perhaps want to have children?

Genesis:Oh Jesus I am a demon,imagine a bunch of mini mes. Woooho cringe, imagine.

I laughed as I looked at him.

Genesis:Look at AJ and Ceasar,her kids are like her, all of them. That boy Ash once asked his mates why were they screaming over a guy with noodle hair,baby face with a body of gorilla?So loud I heard him,I never recovered. Fleur Jesus!Kids somehow take after the wrong parents,I am my mother.

I could feel my whole intestines tighten as I laughed looking at him.

Genesis:Now if I can guarantee they will be like you, I'll turn to a saint. Just imagine seeing you everywhere,I would never get tired.

I couldn't stop blushing.

Genesis:I love your smile,never stop smiling. I will give you anything to make sure that you smile everytime you see me.

NATHAN BLACK

Fleur stepped in the car and sat on the back.

Fleur: Good morning.

Me: Good morning.

Fleur:So me and Mahle we will be taking the car with, well hers.

Me:That is alright. Are you okay?

Fleur:I am fine.

Me: You are always hyper.

Fleur:I like someone and I don't think he would like me.

Me:You are a wonderful woman Fleur, anyone would not like you.

Fleur: Do you?

I looked at her.

Me:Of course I do.

Fleur:Weh why God?

Me:Why what?

Fleur: It's okay, do not mind me.

My phone rang.

Me: Can you grab my phone?

She grabbed it and handed it to me. I looked at the screen and it was my wife.

Me: Autumn.

Autumn: I woke up craving the worst things ever today.

Me: How?

I laughed.

Autumn: Ice cream and it's raining outside love. I want to die.

Me: Don't tell be thinking about killing my kids.

Fleur: Please drop me in the garage.

Me: Class??

Fleur: Drop me in the garage!

I stopped and she walked out, she looked angry as she banged the door.

Autumn: Who was that?

Me: One student, she's been going through some stuff lately and she's trying to hide it. Can I just check on her?

Autumn:Call me back. I love you.

Me:I love you too.

Fleur was unlikely to be emotional unstable,she was already inside grabbing things and throwing them in the basket.

Me:Fleur.

Fleur::Ah why did you follow me?

Me:Did I offend you?

Fleur:Please leave me alone,this crush should be over soon.

Me:Crush?

Fleur:Move.

I stood there confused for a moment then it registered what she meant. I followed her.

Me: You are going to take those things and step in the car, you dare make a fuss I will cause a scene. Try me Zarkina.

I walked back in the car my thoughts everywhere,I didn't know what to say to Fleur. What if I liked her?Why did I offer to take her to school?Why did I want her to smile everytime?I groaned,heard the door open and she sat on the front chair,which was something she's never done ever.

Me:Look I had no idea, it's okay to have a crush on me and understandable to feel jealousy.

Fleur: It's just a crush, no biggy I am just in emotions. Do not mind it.

Me:Fleur-

Fleur:Do not mind it, please don't press on it I'm already at my wits' end please, just don't.

AJ

Just as I sat in the middle I could feel the darkness cover the room, I looked at the darkness. Then it cleared, I jumped when a woman dressed in all black stepped in the room.

Woman: Your match.

I was pulled in by the darkness and rolled off my bed. I landed on my hands and looked in the room, my skin was sweating. I was spooked as I just stood there.

Voice:Now the storm is about to start.

Me:What do you mean?

Gabriel: Something far worse than Hecate is on earth.

Me: What do you mean?

Gabriel:I don't know it yet but something is coming Avuyile and emotionally you are broken.

Me: What am I suppose to do?

Gabriel: Peace, inner peace is what you need. This darkness will not be stopped by anything and it will hurt you if you do something.

I took a deep breath.

Me: Can you please find out what it is??

Gabriel: I will. Meanwhile prayer is your weapon.

He was gone.

Cesar: Flower.

I turned to look at him.

Me: No go back to sleep baby, I'm just going to make some tea.

Cesar: I'm coming with.

I have had encounters with darkness but this was much worse.

Me: Oh God what do I do?

✓ GENESIS 22

FLEUR

I looked at my phone.

Me:I have no classes.

Amahle: You do know that we do the same modules?

Me:I know now.

Amahle: You are so dramatic.

My phone rang.

Me:Uhm who is this now?Hi.

Voice:Hi Fleur,this is Ungowam.

Me:Is my mother not picking your calls?

Voice: Nothing like that,I want to talk to you instead.

Me: About?

Voice:Are you coming home this short break?

Me:For?

Voice:I want to talk to you.

Me: About??

Voice: Nothing I can say over the phone.

Me: We have nothing that ties us to talk. What do you want?

Voice: To talk Fleur.

Me: I don't want to talk to you okay.

Voice: Look Zane talked to me-

Me: Since when do you talk to the son of the same woman your mother despises?

Voice: It was-

Me: Not so long ago you were well bent on exposing the Bilsons now you talk to them? Which Bilson are you screwing?

Voice: That is none of your business.

Me: Yet here you are wanting to talk for one of them, right after they attacked your own brother. I'm confused, out of all people you are the wrong person to want to talk for them. He wants me to back off from telling Amahle exactly the truth about him?

Voice: It's not like that-

Me: Ungowam you do realise that everything I have said about Zane is on blogs, social media, newspapers and magazines? Amahle is a fan of those, tell him one thing though, if he ever sends you as his lawyer he might as well find another puppet.

I dropped the call.

Amahle: You still don't like Ungowam.

Me: I don't like anyone from my mother's side especially her mother.

Amahle: What did you mean when you said the Bilsons tried to kill her brother?

Me: The Bilson brothers had a dispute with Micah, Genesis threatened to kill him then bam Xander winds up in the hospital after attacking Micah.

Amahle: Zane?

Me: Should I lie? They are brothers, do business together funny he was there to fire Ungowam now she's talking for him..

I could see her face fall.

Me: Hlehle don't.

Amahle: I understand how you feel, liking someone but then you realise nah it's not what you are suppose to do. I even said yes, thinking I could look past everything but I can't anymore.

Me: What if he's your soulmate?

She looked at me with her eyes wide open, I grinned.

Me: I don't want you to wake up one day and think what if.

Her phone blinked.

Amahle: Would you look at that?

I looked.

Me: I take back everything, is he trying to deny the child?

Amahle: He's trying to discredit the woman before she utters any word.

Me: Or he's telling the truth, it's possible.

Amahle: Whose side are you on? I went through being the other girl with Nqaba, I am not going to do the same with a player.

Then she left me standing there, one thing about my best friend she was very emotional and somehow went deeper than expected. I mean she liked people too much and if I followed she was going to blow. I stood there waiting for the shuttles, I heard footsteps I turned and it was a woman I have never seen in the campus.

Woman: Oh hello.

Me: Hi.

Woman: Do you know where is the bus stop?

Me: On the left outside.

She was about to walk away when she looked at me.

Woman:Wait a minute, you look like AvuyileJange.

Me: She's my mother.

Woman:Oh my goodness-

She was about to hug me but I moved back,she looked at me confused.

Me:I am sorry but I was given clear instructions not to let anyone hug me.

Woman:Being a daughter of a Prophetess, always have to be careful.

Me: Especially with women.

Woman:Mhm nice to meet you,been a long time last time I saw your mother. Where is she?

Me:Back home.

Woman:I know she lives in Trenius where?

Me:Look mam if you think I am going to tell you where is my home without having one single idea who you are then you didn't know my mother as you think. Lastly you came to me knowing who I was now quit pretending.

She grinned,the friendly smile on her face disappeared.

Woman:Ohh trust me your mother can feel my presence, just don't know what I am.

I just looked at her bored.

Me: Nice.

Woman: See you around.

She walked out

Advertisement

I rolled my eyes.

TIA PETRA

I looked at the office before I walked to the front door, I knocked and it was open.

MJ: What do you want from me?

Me: We need to talk immediately.

MJ: Make an appointment like everyone else Tia Petra, in the meantime out of my office. The hell is wrong with you?

Me: Our kids are in love with each other and you think our egos matter?

MJ: Our kids being in love with each other isn't my problem nor is something that will make me want to fix things with you. It's their lives not mine, please don't ever forget that do you hear me?

Me:How the hell will they continue if we can't even stand each other?

MJ:Who decided to fall in love?Them,so they must figure it out just like Romeo and Juliet did,I don't give a damn. If a child of mine is in love with yours then clearly they have a valid reason to want you as a mother in-law.

Me:So you must be better?

MJ: Please do explain why your son tried to kill mine?Then suddenly you are here to apologize. AJ is in her house not once you apologised to her,I trained you Tia Petra. I showed you kindness but you went and turned against me. Now you think I will do the same for my kids,with you?Let my kids do the hell they want with their lives,I am not going to talk to you ever. Out of my damn way.

She sidestepped me.

Me: It's funny how you suddenly are so innocent yet you stood in front of the cameras and declared your sister mentally unstable. You continuously told the world how crazy she was Minothando, suddenly you think you are innocent and shouldn't forgive anyone. Does she know that you invested in that asylum to keep her there?

MJ:It-

Me: We are going to be very civil with each other or I will stop at nothing and make sure that your damn skeletons are out there too. I will not be the bad person and you a good person ever. Now are you going to go back and sit down?

Someone walked out of her office, I moved.

Me: Your Highness.

I bowed a little.

Candy: I will see you around MJ. Tia you are still alive.

I looked at her.

Me: By popular demand.

Candy: You are still never welcomed in Britain, hopefully your kids too one day or very soon.

She touched MJ's shoulder and walked out.

MJ: Oh no we are never going to talk, do your worst.

GENESIS

Dad: Speak!

Me: It's trending.

Dad: This is trending Isaac!

My mother walked in.

Mom: What is going on?

Dad: Your father son is trending for impregnating someone and does not want to take responsibility.

Zane: Responsibility for someone who popped my condoms so she could be a mother? I am not taking any responsibility ever, that's not my child and would never.

Mom:Woah! Have you talked to the girl?

Zane:No,I won't. I am not going to entertain her if she thought I was going to be a father to her child then she clearly doesn't know me.

Dad:The child is innocent.

Zane:Who wanted it?Who asked her to do what she did?

Xander literally put a cushion on his face,I just looked somewhere else.

Zane:I don't want to it ever!

Mom:What happens if she keeps the baby?

Zane: It's her problem not mine.

Mom:Is it the girl outside?

Zane: Outside?

Mom:Some Alicia Keys Rhodes is outside wanting to talk,I was in my feelings to talk to her. What do you want to do?

Me: I'll come with you.

Xander:Me three.

Dad: You are avoiding me.

We laughed as we walked out of the house. As Mom said,a girl was waiting outside the yard of Zane's house.

Alicia:Did you have to make me trend huh?

Zane: What do you want?

Alicia: I'm pregnant and I went to the doctor-

Zane:Guards make sure that this woman stays away from my house,make sure that she never comes back here if she does shoot her for trespassing and ditch her body somewhere. I'm not anyone's baby daddy.

Alicia:Zane please..

Zane: Don't bore me.

He turned and walked back to the house,Xander followed.

Alicia:The baby is innocent.

Me: You didn't think this through did you?

Alicia: Didn't plan-

Me:On forcing pregnancy on my brother and think you'll mother a Bilson. Poor you,my brother is not going to accept a child you purposely got for yourself and thought he would understand. It's women like you some men are absent in kids they never wanted. I would have understood if he wasn't using a condom but you thought it through to pop them. Now that is on you,no one else. Now if I ever see you hovering around my brother,I am sure the newspapers have made it clear that I could be your revelations.

She moved back.

Me:I would hate to make you an orphan with neither siblings,do the right thing and save your loved ones Alicia Keys, you are not the girl on fire as you expected,just common. Bye.

She ran.

Me:Ah I was smiling though.

The guards laughed.

✓ GENESIS 23

BLACK CATALINA

I sat on the rooftop watching the whole entire town.

Me: Trenius, a town built by the Janges etc could be mine but first we need to remove few people in it.

I turned to look at the woman.

Me: How are we going to do?

Meri: I have a feeling that we are actually just starting, AJ isn't even that strong enough to face me alone.

Me: Then how did she banish Hecate?

Meri: Who lied and said she banished Hecate? She wounded her because she had the dagger to kill her, now Lilith had every weapon prepared to kill any of her children destroyed.

Me: So you guys are safe?

Meri: More than safe, we're untouchable.

Me: Then can I trust you to make sure that AJ stays far from me?

Meri: As long as you keep offerings to the Mother then you are more welcomed.

Me:I want everyone miserable and destroyed.

Meri:That can be achieved if we make sure that before we face AJ there's no other successor.

Me:By?

Meri: Lungile Mkhalihi and Avuyile Jange are the top servants,I need you to help me track others and kill them.

Me:That is easy.

Meri:Then we do have a deal.

I heard footsteps,I looked at the person.

Me: What do you have for me?

Penny:We are ready for you.

Me:Are the journalists ready?

Penny:Yes.

Me:This is my time to show up from the dead.

I grinned.

Meri:Right by your side.

We walked to the elevator.

Meri: You got this.

Me:I know.

We finally reached where the journalists were, it was actually full because of the name. It's not everyday you hear that the most wanted woman is coming live willingly. Cameras flashed as I walked to the podium, I stood there and Meri stood right next to me.

Me: Good afternoon, my name is Black Catalina Manona. Oh yes I am the first born of Zamani Manona, father of Zinnia Manona-Petra, Ndodi and Zwiphi, unfortunately the two are dead because of the Sanchez. While they were telling you about me, did they tell you how my cousin Erin Sanchez had my father murdered, my half-sister raped and impregnated by Damon Black.

Everyone gasped.

Me: Yeah the crazy guy is the father of Zenam Manona-Petra, the Sanchez continued to terrorize a lot of family and you are acting like they are gods. What I felt is the same as what they felt when I lost too. Police are going to try and hunt for me, unfortunately whatever you do you are not going to be nowhere close in getting me. I killed Erin, Hunter, Aliza and Natasha, I am just starting. My main goal is having total control and certain people are standing in my way.

Journalists lifted their hands but I looked around for the girl.

Me: Don't you want to ask anything Ungowam Manona? Ask your auntie?

She looked up surprised, everyone looked at her.

Ungowam: I-uhm I have nothing?

Me: Tell your aunty, mother that I would like to see her try.

She just looked at me.

Me: Another?

Journalist: We all know that all these people were nothing, AJ ruled.

Me: We'll see dear.

ZANE BILSON

I waited on the gate

Advertisement

I spotted Fleur before and walked to her. Everyone looked at me.

Me: Fleur.

She looked up confused.

Fleur: What is it?

Me:Uhm look I don't know what to say or do.

Fleur:Did you send Ungowam?

Me:She doesn't even let me breath next to her.

Fleur: Continue with the speech.

Me:Look I understand that I have a bad history with women, it's everywhere that is hard to ignore. I know that she might be labelled as a gold digger,I know that people will think I am using her. That I do understand, you know that I have stalked her for months now because what I felt when I saw her, is hard to describe. I am not asking her to wake up and trust me,all I am asking for is a chance to show that I do want her. What I feel is something that I am willing to fight for.

She stood there with her fingers on her mouth.

Fleur: I am sorry.

Me: I actually understand why you wouldn't want me around your friend. If I hurt her in the way the world is expecting, you are allowed to kill me.

She chuckled.

Fleur: You should turn around,out here confessing.

I turned only to jump to find Amahle standing there.

Me:Hey.

Fleur:Unlock your phone.

Me:Huh?

Fleur:Come down.

I lowered myself.

Fleur:I don't like you but I am going to give you a list of her favourite things but you will need to rent me as long as you are dating.

Me:It has no pin.

I handed it to her.

Amahle: Don't let her bully you.

Me: She's actually nice about it. Mind some ice cream?

Amahle:Fleur!

She threw keys at her.

Amahle: Let's go.

Me: Just like that?

Amahle:She has your phone, you will return.

We walked to my car,I brought security just in case.

Amahle: There's a spot I know in town.

Me: You are beautiful.

She looked at me.

Amahle: Thank you.

I was nervous, with my palms sweating as I started the car. I headed to the cafe per her request, we walked inside and she walked to the counter.

Me: I am the one who asked you-

Amahle: Don't worry about it either.

I looked at her stunned, she just told the cashier what she wanted.

Me: Oreo.

Amahle: Bubblegum and Oreo.

The waiter started on the ice creams.

Me: Uhm why are you not paying?

She chuckled as she handed me the ice cream.

Amahle: Me and Fleur contribute to this restaurant.

Me: Shareholders?

Amahle: No, every month we pay about R1000 just in case we need something here.

Me: Like savings account in a restaurant?

Amahle:Yep,so everything we take is taken off from that money when the month ends the change is the tip.

Me:Can I just say you guys are the smartest bunch ?

Amahle:We just don't like paying all the time actually,stingy.

I laughed.

Amahle:I hate paying!

Me:Next time I am not letting you pay for me.

Her phone rang,she looked at it.

Amahle:Fleur miss me already?

She laughed.

Amahle: Didn't I tell you that don't let Fleur bully you?

Me: What happened?

Amahle: Apparently she just had a standoff with Xander Bilson,he ended up dropping the call and she just went beyond in fact.

Me:Oh God!

Amahle: Called him again now she thinks calling your mother and introducing herself as the daughter in-law would be nice.

Me:She wouldn't do that right?

Amahle: You are going to be disowned if you believe that.

I sighed.

MJ

Me:That is bold.

Candy: She's declaring war like she knows she has the upper hand.

Lisa: She's your sister-in-law.

Me:Tell me about it.

Ungowam walked in.

Me:No police is doing anything at all Ungowam.

Ungowam: Something is just off about this,I mean anyone who just shows up after years of escaping the police is suppose to be arrested.

Candy:Dark powers?

Me: Spiritually she's very ready.

Ungowam:Has anyone talked to Aunt AJ?

Me:Do you know that AJ isn't here?

Ungowam: Isn't here?

Me:By the panic on your face you are avoiding your aunt.

Ungowam: I'm not avoiding her.

Me:I even know where is my little sister and her little follower doesn't know. Why are you avoiding her?

Ungowam:Mom please.

Me: You are avoiding me too dear little daughter.

Ungowam:I am just busy.

Me:Says the one who took a week off.

Ungowam:Are you watching my moves?

Me: Your moves?Are your moves that important for me to watch them? I'm merely asking why is my daughter avoiding her own siblings,her aunt and her parents like a plague. You are here because of Black Catalina.

Voice:She and Fleur had an argument.

Ungowam: Aunty.

Me:She thinks that I have no idea.

Ungowam:Do I have to tell you everything?

AJ:My kids are off limits even to you especially knowing why you fought.

She looked so pale.

AJ:Why am I here?

Me:Tell me that you saw the news.

AJ:News?About?

I turned on the TV,she looked like she just saw a horror movie as she looked at the news.

Me: Remember her?

AJ:The woman next to her.

Me: What about her?

AJ: Gabriel who is she?

She turned,her face looked like it was drained all the blood from her face.

Me: Avuyile!

AJ: Whatever happens don't go anywhere near Catalina,rather be a coward.

Me:Wha-

AJ: Don't!Tell everyone, including the kids. I have to go.

She was out of the room so fast. I looked at her stunned.

Candy:Now I am scared.

✓ GENESIS 24

UNGOWAM

I sat across the detective in silence, he was looking at the papers then he finally looked at me.

Detective: What is your relationship with Wonga?

Me: We were just having spontaneous sex.

Detective: What was he doing in your house?

Me: He was suppose to come but I left early. He called me that he was there but unfortunately I wasn't going to be home anymore.

Detective: Why?

Me: Uhm I had to interview someone outside town.

Detective: Who?

Me: I can't tell you that.

Detective: You are a suspect in murder-

Me: No, I am not, you just want me to be. Isn't that the obvious?

Detective: I just want you to be?

Me: Clearly you thought of that but now can I leave? I will not be a suspect when all cameras show me leave town. I have a job to do.

My phone rang as I got up.

Me: Hello?

Editor: I need you to track down prophets, find them and try to talk to them.

Me: My aunt is one.

Editor: Many others..

Me: Uhm why?

Editor:: Just find them and get me their names.

She dropped the call.

Me: What does she want with prophets?

.....

I knocked in the office and walked in.

Editor: Done?

I froze as I looked at Black Catalina and the woman.

Me: Yes the list is here.

Catalina: You are your mother's daughter, the Jange blood is strong pretty hard to deny a child. All of you have your mother's features more.

The editor took the file, the woman looked at my face.

Woman: Your aunt is forever prepared, nice earrings.

I touched my earrings.

Me: Is there anything else?

Editor: No.

Woman: Go ahead and call her that we now know where is each and every prophet, healer, God's favourite human.

I walked out and dialled Aunt AJ's number.

AJ: Ungo.

Me: I just did the most horrible thing ever, I gave Black Catalina lists-

AJ: I know, don't blame yourself.

The call ended.

Me: Huh?

I called Genesis.

Genesis: Liefie.

Me:Where are you?

Genesis:I did tell you that I am in Glass Land.

Me: When are you coming back?

Genesis: Tomorrow.

Me:Okay, we'll talk.

Genesis:Are you alright?

Me:We will talk when you come back. Bye.

I took a deep breath before walking to my office.

NATHAN BLACK

I blinked and shook my head,I turned to look at Autumn sleeping and sighed. Fleur crossed my mind again,I got up and walked out of the room. Quarnia was sitting with her baby lying on her chest.

Me:Still awake?

Quarnia: Hoping that Dad comes back. He's refusing to accept that Uncle Hunter is dead you know?

Me:I know.

Quarnia:He should really start dating or something.

Me: You want a stepmother?

Quarnia: Come on no one is replacing Mom, I just want him to smile again.

Me: We don't even know if he likes anyone.

Quarnia: Then we just need to take him everywhere.

Me: Yeah.

Quarnia: Why are you awake?

Me: I just can't sleep.

Nia showed up so did Quinn and Niva.

Me: Family bonds.

Nia: You two are so damn loud.

Me: Ehh quiet my wife is sleeping.

Niva: So why are you two awake?

Quarnia: Don't you somehow think Dad should date?

Quinn: It's his decision not ours.

Nia: Ohh you think he might be holding on because of us?

Me: Yeah, maybe doesn't want it to look like he's replacing our mother.

Quinn: It's almost three decades since she died.

Niva:More like murdered.

Me: That's not what we are talking about here.

Quarnia:Mom was strong enough to date marry him,who else is going to do that without thinking about money?

My phone blinked,,it was an Instagram notification that Fleur was live and had tagged me. What were they doing in Red Valley?

Me:Excuse me.

I pressed on it as I walked to the kitchen,she was literally drunk and saying that she did not even know how they will go home. I turned

Advertisement

grabbing my car keys and headed to the bedroom. Autumn opened her eyes.

Me:I just have to pick some kids.

She closed her eyes and I got dressed.

Nia:Where are-

The door opened,Xander walked in holding my drunk father.

Xander:Mom said that I should drive him home.

Me:I am going to pick some students of mine.

Xander: Let me take you there.

We walked to his car.

Xander: You sure care about your students.

Me: They just stuck in a club, I would hate if anything were to happen to them.

He drove in silence, we reached the club. Xander followed me as I walked in. Fleur and Amahle were sitting on a couch.

Me: Ladies.

Fleur jumped, was on her feet and jumped on me.

Me: Ohh?

Fleur: I am very much sober, have been pretending to be drunk. Amahle had two drinks, I think they were spiked. Was afraid to even step out.

Me: You should have sent a text.

Fleur: I tagged you didn't I? I hope it wasn't overboard.

Me: We were awake.

Fleur: Will it be a problem if you take her to your house? I don't know who spiked her drink.

Me: Why are you clubbing in Red Valley?

Fleur: I don't have to tell you that. Can you?

Me:Sure.

Someone coughed.

Fleur:Za-ah no you are the other twin?

Xander stared at her.

Me:Xander?

Xander:Xander Bilson.

Fleur: I am sure everyone knows that.

Xander: You are pretty.

Fleur:Uhm thank you?

I looked at his face turn red,he liked her?Why did I feel so jealous? I picked Amahle up who looked like she was sleeping but awake,she mumbled as we walked to the car.

Fleur:Are we going to your house or?

I groaned knowing that no one was in my house, couldn't take them to my home and had to ask Xander out of all people.

Me:Tthe family is home. Do you mind Xander taking them with you? I'll check them tomorrow morning.

Xander:No biggie.

I wanted to swear at his chippy voice.

AJ

I knocked on the door,it was opened by a young girl.

Me:Hi.

Girl:Hello Ma,can I help you?

Me: Prophetess Lungile Mkhaliphi.

She moved letting me inside the house,I walked in.

Lungile:Rather surprised that you are here in my house.

Me:I am sure that you already know what we are facing.

Lungile::What we are facing? What are you talking about?

Me:The demon of hell,one of queens or princesses of hell.

She looked at me confused.

Me: Where's Michael?

Lungile:He left few days ago-

Me:All angels on earth were called.

Lungile:All of them?

Me:Yes.

Lungile:Which angel is on your side?

Me: Gabriel and he told me the truth.

I looked at her and sat down.

Lungile: Truth?

Me: All prophets, well chosen people are all being hunted.

Lungile: Hunted?

Me: Will the fight between evil ever going to end?

Lungile: AJ!

Me: Me and you will be hunted last, everyone is going to start dying the moment all the demons finally arrive.

Lungile: Finally arrive?

Me: The seven sins are coming to earth.

Lungile: Hell no! That's impossible!

Me: An angel lost its way and let loose the most deadliest demons, do you know what is funny? Lilith is coming too.

Lungile: Jesus!

Me: Tell me again where do we stand? No one can help us now, even God.

Lungile: We're dying aren't we?

Me: If we don't win, yes we'll die like nothing.

Lungile:In the path of darkness-

Me:We have orders to protect God's people before you say that,we accepted our callings to guide them not ourselves.

Jesus died on the cross for the same people,if we don't fight no one is ever going to be safe. The antichrist is basically here.

✓ GENESIS 25

FLEUR

I looked around the house in confusion,I had no idea how to get anywhere at all.

Voice:Lost?

I jumped almost knocking one of the vases off.

Me: Yeah.

I looked at the guy who was just staring at me smiling,it was weird.

Me:Xander?

He frowned.

Xander:I was coming up to call you and your friend for breakfast.

Me: She's still sleeping.

He walked towards me.

Xander:Come on.

I followed him and we headed to the kitchen,plates were on the table.

Me: You made this?

Xander:I can definitely cook.

Me: You?

Xander:Oh trust my mother prefers home cooked meals more than anything.

Me:My mother would rather die than cook.

Xander:I love cooking.

It was weird,he was a Bilson and acting way too fine with me.

Me: You are being weird.

Xander:Why do you say that?

Me: You are staring at me Xander.

Xander: You are really pretty.

Me:Wait til you realise who I am.

A knock echoed,I grabbed a plate and he walked out. I heard voices and they all walked in.

Zane:Fleur?

I turned with a smile,Tia flipping Petra looked shocked to see me, Zane looked at his twin so did Genesis.

Me:Zane what's up?

Xander: You know her?

Tia: Why is AJ's daughter here Xander?

He looked at me in confusion.

Xander: You are AJ's daughter?

Me: Surprise! Hey T, nice to meet you and I should leave before I mysteriously disappear and wind up in an asylum.

She gasped.

Tia: Why would I put a child in an asylum?

Me: You did it once, it wouldn't hurt to do it again would it?

Genesis: Okay little girl, you are not going to talk to our mother-

Me: Hey beginning keep quiet! "Don't inherit feuds from parents." What else do people say? Oh I got it, my mother says be nice Fleur and be happy. Do you understand how hard it is not to hate you and everyone who supported you?

I raised my hand..

Me: Know what is weird? We have a house with glass doors every corner, almost everything is open in our house all because of you. My mother has a phobia of closed spaces because she was forcibly put in a cell for telling the truth about you!

She closed her mouth.

Me:The only friend she had,ran her down just like everyone. Have you seen her in a closed space?I have and it's the most heart breaking experience,the strongest woman on earth can't survive closed space. You walk everywhere with your head up there in the clouds and don't even feel guilty. I hate that the same God who teaches us forgiveness kept you alive as a reminder that friends that do turn against each other. Funny she supported you when the world taught you were dying and you had her pay dearly.

No one said anything.

Me:Xander tried to kill my cousin,weird huh. Your sons are as rotten as you, hopefully karma skips you and goes for them.

Genesis coughed,I paused and looked at him. He coughed again.

Me:Catch him!

Xander jumped and caught him before he could fall.

Tia:What is going on?

Me:Get me a straw and a blade!Call the ambulance!

I pulled his up and felt his pulse.

Me:Hurry up!

Zane handed them to me.

Xander: What are you doing?

I slit his throat a bit and pushed the pipe on his throat

Advertisement

his chest started moving up.

Tia: How did you-

Me: I've done this a lot of times, he is having hard time breathing so I had to help him breathe. He has chronic bronchitis.

Tia: What?

Me: He won't live that long.

I struggled staying sane as his head sat on my thighs, I was supposed to let him down but I couldn't as every memory played in my head.

Me: There's no cure.

UNGOWAM

I called him again but he was not picking up.

Voice: Can I sit?

I looked up at the woman.

Me:Sure.

Woman:Penny.

I looked at her in confusion.

Me: Ungowam.

Penny:I know, just pretend we're talking about the menu.

I put the menu down and started pointing.

Penny:Black Catalina is working with almost all the cartels that hate almost everyone. Can you believe that the Mexicans are handing her guns to run Trenius? Don't mention the Brazilians.

She pointed on the menu.

Penny: Anyway warn your family and,Catalina is doing a lot to have control of everything even if it means killing prophets. Merihim, Google says a bunch about that. Lastly,tell AJ they are still struggling bringing the sins on board.

I looked at her.

Penny:I learnt ages ago that fear isn't going to help. The problem is that Hecate's power that your ancestors well prophets hid in the old home is what they need to bring an army of demons on earth.

Me:Why are you telling me this?

Penny:I know that they will think you will write about, exposing me in return but you won't and they will believe that we were talking about menu. King size burger would do right?

Me:Right.

She raised her hand.

Penny:By the way Merihim has a true form, what you have seen isn't what she looks like so be very careful.

I looked at her,she got up so did the people following her and she walked to the counter. I didn't do anything, just sat down looking at the menu. Genesis was worrying me as I called him again.

Me: Genesis where are you?

BLACK CATALINA

Me:And?

Meri:I can't bring them forward,we need Hecate's powers.

Me:How do we get them?

Meri:I need to check.

She walked to her bowl,she looked at it but nothing came up.

Meri: Even if we use her kids AJ won't bulge, you could have seen how that daughter of hers reacted. Wait, now this is interesting.

Me: What?

Meri: Tia Petra is protected by a black goddess one of Lilith's archenemy.

Me: Huh?

Meri: There's life somewhere between these kids, just can't point out who.

Me: Like them falling for each other? How is that suppose to help us get AJ get the powers?

Meri: It's basically AJ versus the most powerful thing ever, it is dominant and AJ won't allow that. She'll be injured and will need the power but at the same time, there's one problem.

Me: What?!

Meri: How do we get Tia and AJ at each other's throats?

Me: AJ is a prophet you do know that right?

Meri: An anaconda can turn to a viper overnight. I will need to transform and figure out a way to get them back at each other's throats.

✓ GENESIS 26

XANDER BILSON

Dr:Were there any other signs?

Mom:No. What is wrong with my son doctor?

Me: Chronic bronchitis, that's what Fleur said.

Dr:Is she a doctor?

Me:No.

Dr:Well she is telling the truth, Genesis is suffering from chronic bronchitis.

Me: Ohh.

Dr:We-

Mom:She said that there's no cure.

The doctor's face went pale.

Mom: She's not lying?

Dr:Look Mrs Bilson,we-

Mom:Answer the damn question!

Me:Mom please calm down. Just call Dad.

She looked at where I was looking, Fleur sat on the chair with her head between her legs.

Mom: Check on her.

I walked to her.

Me: Hey.

She looked up, she looked exhausted.

Me: Why don't you get some rest?

Fleur: I already slept at night.

Me: From what I know from my siblings you are like your mother.

Fleur: I can say the same thing about you.

Me: Thank you for what you did for my brother.

Fleur: I am not cruel like you make me to be.

Me: Nor did I try to kill Micah, he tried to kill me.

Fleur: What are you talking about?

Me: Don't believe everything your family tells you, just like I never believed my mother's reasoning to put your mother in an asylum. Just because we are on her side doesn't mean we agree with everything she did. No parent is innocent in this mess.

Fleur:I would never believe anything coming out of her children's mouth either,pretty good in lying.

Me:Then ask your cousin the truth,ask him where it happened and there were plenty of CCTV cameras capturing everything.

Fleur: Let's say you are telling the truth,why are you letting him get away?

Me: Don't you know that anything that has to do with the Janges mysteriously disappear?Imagine trying to say that one of you is a liar,there will be no proof and again we'll turn out as the "sons of Tia Petra", won't we?

Fleur: That is true.

Me: Aren't you hungry?

Fleur: You are nice to me,why?

Me:Eh just.

Fleur:Dude you are basically a mini version of your mother yet you are acting nice.

Me: You and me both yet you are not blowing off.

Fleur:I have class,I can't be blowing when your brother is sleeping on a hospital bed. I am not heartless,thank you.

Me:Neither am I,the world already assumed how we will turn out so there's no use to act otherwise.

She looked at me shocked.

Fleur:I can't unhear everything you have said to me.

Me:I know.

Damn this was the most longest time I have spoken to a woman,I wasn't my usual self but here I am explaining myself to a child of a woman who would kill me.

Me: Before this go wrong, let's get something to eat. I'm starving.

I got up,she looked at my hand.

Me:Please take it.

She took it,I pulled her up and walked besides her.

Fleur:Red Empire is freezing cold.

I took off my hoodie.

Fleur:No need.

Me:Ohh trust me it's fine,I have another in my car.

Fleur:Dang I look so small in it.

Me:Drama. This way.

AJ

Lungile: So, what really is the meaning of forgiveness? For a moment, try to forget everything you have heard or assumed about forgiveness. Forgive means to choose to take someone whom you have been holding in your debt, holding in resentment and bitterness, and release him or her. Forgiveness simply means you choose to release somebody from personal obligation to you even though that person will have to face the justice of God. In Matthew 18, Jesus' disciple Peter asked Jesus: "How many times shall I forgive my brother when he sins against me? Up to seven times?"

Jesus answered with a parable in which a man owed a king 10,000 talents (today's equivalent of millions of dollars) and was on the brink of having to sell his wife and children into slavery to pay the debt, but the pleas of the man to the king were heard and his debt was cancelled. Forgiveness. Release.

If you believe in forgiveness that God forgives even though He is not obligated to and that we'll have the best kind of life if we hold other people in our lives with a loose grip then you will see people for what they can be and what they were intended to be

Advertisement

rather than as they are.

My head ached,I got up as she continued preaching.

Lungile: It's never easy. Psalm 32 is a landmark passage about the way forgiveness works: "Blessed is he whose transgressions are forgiven, whose sins are covered. Blessed is the man whose sin the LORD does not count against him and in whose spirit is no deceit. When I kept silent, my bones wasted away through my groaning all day long. For day and night your hand was heavy upon me; my strength was sapped as in the heat of summer. Then I acknowledged my sin to You and did not cover up my iniquity. I said, 'I will confess my transgressions to the LORD'—and You forgave the guilt of my sin." First, to be forgiven is to be blessed beyond your wildest dreams, knowing that your Creator, the gracious Father above, is willing to forgive your mistakes and offences. God is willing not to hold our sins against us. One's record is wiped clean, no debt owed, the account settled. Notice the progression of the person's heart in this passage: "my bones wasted away... my strength was sapped." This is a person being "eaten up on the inside" as we sometimes say. Guilt will do that; and though it is hard to believe, the tortured conscience is a gift. Still, there are many times when a heartfelt apology is the right thing to do; and if you know it's right, don't hold back.

I paused and turned to look at her, she looked right at me. I sighed and walked out of the church. I rubbed my head, Ceasar followed.

Cesar:Are you alright?

Me:My head is splitting.

I looked up and I was somewhere else.

Voice: Didn't think it would be possible summoning you.

I turned and Merihim stood there in her demonic true form.

Me: Merihim.

I could feel something tickling my feet,she jumped and I was pushed back. I was back in front of the church with Lungile holding my hand.

Lungile: What happened?

Me:She summoned me, a demon-

Lungile:A higher ranking demon mind than AJ. I never thought it was possible.

Me: I felt the darkness.

Lungile: She's getting stronger.

Me: Something is off don't you think?Why is she attacking?Where are the angels when you need them?

Lungile: They seemingly disappeared.

My head ached again,then I finally saw the person.

Me:At least I know who I have to visit for my next assignment.

Lungile:Who?

Me: Isaac Bilson again.

Ceasar: Again?

Me:At birth,I was there to keep him alive now at this age, again.

AMAHLE

I groaned as I walked again.

Me:Aurora!Aurora!

I was lost and it wasn't funny,I was already to cry. I heard footsteps and someone emerged from the passage.

Me: Zane?

I didn't remember seeing him anywhere.

Zane: Surprised to see me beautiful?

Me:Where is Fleur?

Zane:How am I suppose to know? You called me to pick you up and she wasn't there.

Me:Heh?

I walked back to the room, looked for my phone and grabbed it. It was off, I was about to walk out when I saw her phone on the chair.

Me: What is-

It had missed calls from Nathan.

Zane: I'm joking, I don't know how you two got to my brother's house.

Me: Which brother?

He pointed to his face.

Me: Your twin? Where are they?

Zane: Genesis fainted, Fleur helped him so she kind of didn't want to let him go to the hospital.

Me: Fleur?

Zane: He coughed and she just screamed for someone to catch him before he could fall. Is she studying to be a doctor?

Me: No.

Zane: Weird she knew right away what he has already.

Me: Chronic bronchitis?

Zane: You-

Me: She had a brother who had it, so she knows it far away.

Zane:Ash?

Me:No,I really need to check on her.

Zane: Unfortunately you are staying here until they return,for someone who doesn't remember what happened last night you should be sleeping.

Me:Look dude-

Zane: Curious though,why was Nathan here?He told me few things about spiked drinks that you had. Your friend had to call someone's husband in the middle of the night.

Me:I didn't know that they were spiked.

Zane:Well clearly someone wanted you in their bed one way or the other.

I sat on the floor.

Zane: Don't worry I already know who.

I looked at him.

Me:Huh?

Zane: Joking.

Me: You are not laughing.

Zane:I know. This is the way to the kitchen.

✓ GENESIS 27

UNGOWAM

I walked up and down trying to gather strength to walk up to his ward, past his family and siblings.

Me: Who am I kidding?

I finally walked down the passage towards the ward, surprisingly no one was on the waiting area like in the morning. I have been in Red Empire since last night, came to the hospital and couldn't walk up to the Bilsons, in the morning too now in the afternoon still struggling. I finally reached his room, I knocked and someone said that I must walk in. I don't know what I was expecting but definitely not a woman sitting holding his hand as he slept. For a moment I stood there trying to know who she was but nothing came.

Me: Oh hi, I didn't know that he was asleep or had visitors.

Woman: I came here so no one would see me cry over him. I'm Felicity.

Me: I'm just a friend of his, heard about the tragic this morning was out of town. I mean few days ago.

Felicity: Been out of the country for the past few months, Britney called me hysterical, telling me what happened so I had

to fly home. It is heartbreaking to see the love of my life lying on the bed like this.

I could feel my body temperature getting higher, I could feel my heart stop for a moment.

Me:I feel for you.

A knock echoed,I looked at the door.

Felicity:Come in.

I felt like dying as Aunt AJ walked in,she didn't look surprised to see me as she smiled,not really.

AJ:Ungo.

Me:Makazi.

She chuckled.

AJ:Fancy seeing you here out of Trenius jurisdiction. Hello there.

Felicity:Hi Miss.

AJ:Mrs. You must be?

Felicity: Felicity Gomes,Genesis's girlfriend.

AJ:Damn he's a player like his mother,an apple really doesn't fall far from its tree.

Felicity: What is that suppose to mean?

AJ:It means that you two share his dick, that's what-

Me:Mamncane!

Felicity: Is this some sort of a joke?

AJ:Nope, you left for another country and he went to her.

She looked at me in shock.

Felicity:Is it true?

Me: Google her, she's joking.

AJ:Yeah just type AJ.

She walked around his bed.

Felicity:If you are this woman, you are not suppose to be here.

AJ:Call Tia then.

She walked out of the room.

Me:Did you have to tell her?

AJ: What do you think will happen when everyone find out what you two are doing huh?The world is still racist yet you are so fucken soft Ungowam, you can't date a white guy and have that kind of mentality. That girl boldly claimed and you said nothing.

Me: I am not about to battle for a man who is probably using me.

AJ: True,now there's two of you in his life. The girl he can take anywhere in the public eye and the girl he can take to his house and heart. Who is he going to choose?

I just looked at him lying on the bed.

AJ:Look if it comes down to him having to choose between you and her,please don't bother yourself at all.

I looked at her.

AJ:If by any chance someone has to choose between you and someone, just know that you are not worth it. Because if he loves you as much as he said,there would be no choosing between you and someone else ever.

Me:How do we just become lovers when our families-

AJ:Then you need to ask yourself if you fell for him because of the thrill of danger, forbidden fruit things and stuff. Ask yourself that.

The door was ripped open,I jumped as Tia and her husband stepped in. They looked at me then Aunt AJ,my aunt continued pouring some sort of salt around the bed.

AJ:Took long to get here.

Tia: What are you doing here?

AJ:I brought him to this life,as much as he's your responsibility he's mine too.

Zak: What are you talking about?

AJ:Of course all she ever did is make me an enemy while she's a saint. Did you ever told anyone?No, you didn't.

She finished pouring the salt around.

AJ:I don't even know why I am helping you out of all dogs in this world, your goddess won't be able to help your son.

My aunt did the craziest thing and spat on Tia's face then walked out,I walked past feeling out of the world. I quickly ran to my aunt.

Me:Mamncane!

She paused and turned to look at me.

AJ:Use what you used to get here Ungowam.

She got in her car and drove,I just stood there completely forgetting that I just discovered I was sharing a man.

Voice:Ohh sorry Miss.

I turned,a woman stood there looking at me,she wore platform stilettos and smiled at me.

Me:Hey.

Woman: I'm Alitha,well Dr Alitha and gosh I have no idea how to navigate the hospital.

Me: You are new in Red Empire?

Alitha:Never been here in my life

I am only here for this week but I am suppose to be starting in Trenius next week and that too is going to be a nightmare.

Me:Take my number,I live in Trenius,I could help you around.

She typed it on her phone.

Me: Actually this hospital has someone who will help you navigate,just walk in, immediately on your right You will reception.

Alitha:Thank you.

Me:Good luck.

Alitha:Thanks.

She turned and walked inside,I walked to my car.

ZANE BILSON

Me:Where?

Guard: They are in the basement.

I walked to the men tied to the chairs in the basement.

Me: Billy and Sam.

They looked at me.

Sam: What do you want from us?

Me: Thing is you spiked my girlfriend's drink few days ago, by the looks of it you know.

Billy: I swear we didn't know that she was your girlfriend. We just had orders from the Selanas to spike her drinks and get her alive.

Me: Who?

Billy: Her father and sister.

Me: Then what?

Sam: We were going to kill her after.

Me: So you two go around killing women?

Billy: They were going to pay us half a million.

Me: While you are dead?

Sam: Wha-

I took out the gun and the silencer.

Billy: Look man, we'll disappear and never show up.

Me: You will be dead I know.

Sam: We can do-

I pulled the trigger and he slumped over.

Billy: I-

Me: You didn't hesitate to talk, I like you somehow.

He gulped.

Me: Now these two men are going to help you get the body to your car, which we will be tracking. You are going to call Selana and tell him that you needed to talk. You are going to give him the body. Do you know me?

Billy: One of them Bilson twins with the glasses.

Me: Zane Bilson. You are going to tell him exactly this, one or the other he's going to come to me on his own. I am known as one of the most persuasive people you can meet. Lastly Amahle is under my protection, I'll make him a prey if he dares again. Untie him.

I walked up the stairs out of the basement.

Britney: Hey, I have been calling you.

Me: I was just checking if I can make the basement a room.

Britney: Well apparently Genesis has a girlfriend we didn't know about.

Me:Are we suppose to know?

Britney:I called Felicity.

Me:Why the fuck would you do that?

She jumped.

Britney:Chill.

Me:Who asked you to call her?

Britney: Zane you are scaring me.

I sighed.

Me:He loved her, when she got that opportunity to work overseas he tried to keep her here by proposing.

Britney:She said no?

Me:She felt like he was proposing to keep her from reaching her dreams,which was true. They fought and she left, never broke up but your big brother took a big blow.

Britney:Then this should be a reason enough to talk about this.

Me:He loves someone else.

Britney:Does he?I mean he still didn't break up with Felicity,has another girl for fuck's sake. What was he thinking making a woman choosing between her dream and him?

Me: I'm done trying to make you understand that Felicity broke his heart, something that was new to him.

Britney:By choosing her dream?Why didn't he accept that?

Me:Can you accept that someone you love is going to be thousands of miles away from you for months?Look at that.

Britney:Well clearly they still love each other, she's here now isn't she?

Me:Ohh brother you are going to explain everything or you are good as single.

Britney:Do you know his other girl?

Me:No I don't,I know what he said about her.

Britney: According to Fel she's black.

Me:Are you and Felicity friends?

Britney: You don't like her do you?

Me:Nope,I don't. She broke his heart and didn't bother for half a year,he called her and she blocked his calls. She thinks she can waltz in his life just like that.

Britney: Don't talk like that,Genesis might disappoint you.

Me:Screw him then.

Britney:But honestly it's up to him.

Me:As far as I am concerned,if he has to think and choose then he should just go back to Felicity. I am going out,see you later.

I grabbed my keys.

Britney: You are so emotional today!

FLEUR

Amahle: I'm never drinking out of nowhere ever again.

Me:Mhm.

I continued scrolling down in Instagram.

Amahle:I was spooked.

Me:Uhuh!

Amahle: What are you doing?

Me:Mhm.

Amahle:Aurora!

I jumped almost dropping my phone on the floor.

Me:Heh?

Amahle: You are not serious. What were you doing on your phone?

Me: Nothing.

She looked at me.

Amahle: Since when do we lie to each other?

I sighed and gave her my phone.

Amahle: Oh my gosh! You are stalking him aren't you?

Me: Duhh, I am trying to find the reason he's nice to me.

Amahle: Tell me where you two went.

Me: I told you.

Amahle: But I want to hear it again. He's hot.

Me: I know right but I am not interested in him anyway.

Amahle: Because Dr Black who is very much married, is clouding you right?

Me: Infatuation with him.

Amahle: Athandile was infatuated with my boyfriend, they are married today. Dr Black's wife is pregnant, you are a child don't let this bli-

A knock echoed.

Me: Who is it?

Voice: Nathan.

Amahle: Let me go to my room.

I got up and walked to the door.

Nathan:I heard about what happened,are you alright?

Me:I didn't faint and landed on a hospital bed if that is what you are meaning to ask me. Come in.

Nathan:I was worried sick about you.

Me: I am fine.

He grabbed my hands.I,I held my breath looking at him off guard.

Nathan:Are you sure?

Me:Yes.

My mistake was looking at him,we stared at each other. So fast his lips were on mine,I couldn't stop myself from responding. It was electrifying as he pulled me closer. My phone rang so loud,I bumped him and walked to my phone on the table. I did not even look at who was calling,I just grabbed it and answered.

Me:Mhm?

Xander:Hi.

I looked at Nathan as he sat on the couch.

Me:Where did you get my number?

Xander: Your friend.

Me:Can we talk later, I'm kind of busy now.

Xander:Okay cool.

I dropped the call and sighed. What the fuck was I doing?

✓ GENESIS 28

GENESIS

I felt so tired as I looked at the people sitting in my room.

Mom: Are you good?

I looked around, I was looking for Ungo but then I remembered that she wouldn't be here.

Me: I am fine, what happened?

Mom: Don't you remember?

Me: I fainted.

Dad: We'll talk about it later.

The door opened and Felicity walked in, my heart nearly stopped beating.

Me: What is she doing here?

Britney: I called her.

Me: Who asked you?

Britney: To call your girlfriend?

Me: She's not my girlfriend, I want her gone.

Felicity: Break up with me then, that is what I asked you to do.

The door opened and a female doctor walked in. She paused and looked at the ground.

Dr: I'm Dr Alitha, what is that on the floor?

Mom: It's a protection salt and no one is suppose to remove it at all, that is why we're outside it.

Dr:Salt does what exactly?So how am I suppose to work on the patient if there's salt covering his bed? What happens if I mistakenly kick it?

I watched as her skin paled.

Mom:I don't know.

Dr: I'll call another doctor.

I watched as her skin gained its colour as she walked out.

Me:Who put the salt?

Dad:AJ.

I looked at the door.

Me:Was she alone?

Mom:Ungo something was with her.

Felicity:Same girl that AJ woman said was dating you.

Me:Why are you still around?

Felicity:Break up with me!

Me: It's over sweetheart.

Felicity:I only came back to tell you I gave birth a month ago.

We all looked at her.

Me:To what?

Felicity: Your child,I struggled to tell you considering how we fought like wild animals the last time I saw you.

Me: I am still high on that medication, there's no way I have a child. No way.

Felicity:Here.

She put the envelope on my hands and walked out.

Me:It can't be possible.

Dad:Like father like son.

My mother smacked him so hard on the hard,we ended up laughing because we knew the story too well. I just realised that I was a father to a baby girl,then my mind went to Ungowam. She was going to have a reason to stay away from me,I rubbed my forehead.

Mom:I know what you thinking. Will she accept that you have a baby?If I were you I would do a DNA first.

Xander: I'm sure Felicity knows that it will be the first step, otherwise she wouldn't have lied. Clearly she's not lying, I was hoping she is.

Zane: I still don't like her, they will rekindle their stupid romance.

Britney: You are so emotional little brother.

Zane: Genesis was just so happy now back to square one.

Mom: At the end you also are going to accept that Alicia has your child, an innocent baby that didn't ask to be made.

Zane: Count me out, she will make a great single mother.

Me: Brit is right, you are so emotional.

Zane: Screw you!

We laughed at him.

Xander: Anyway Liefie called more than your mother does.

He handed me my phone.

Britney: Who is this girl?

I dialled the number, it rang.

Ungo: What can I do for you?

Me: I want to talk about the misunderstanding.

Ungo:Were you two still dating?

Me:No.

Ungo:Look I just checked through the internet and I don't like what I am seeing,the girl you can introduce to your is with you and it's not me. Now again did you two breakup?

Me:No but-

Ungo:No need to explain

Advertisement

I get it. I was just a phase.

Me:We need to talk,the moment I am out I will be Trenius and we'll talk Ungowam.

Xander:I fucken knew it!

Zane:Know what?!

I dropped the call.

Britney:As in MJ's daughter?Oh my goodness!

Xander:This guy stalked her on social media and borrows me his laptop,I knew it!Oh damn MJ's daughter? Whatever you are having I want it.

Mom:Says the guy who took AJ's daughter to get something to eat in a restaurant, skipped the shops in the hospital.

Zane:Ho ho ho.

Xander:She helped Genesis.

Zane:Slept in your house.

Xander: Because Nathan-why are you looking at me like that?
I'm telling the truth you guys!

I just laughed.

NATHAN BLACK

She laid on my chest just playing with her braids.

Me:What are you doing?

Fleur: It's a habit.

Me:Mhm.

My phone rang.

Me:Hey.

Autumn:The baby is coming Nathan!

I jumped and I was on my feet.

Me: I'm coming.

I dropped the call.

Fleur: What happened?

Me: Autumn is going on labour.

Fleur: Isn't it early?

Me: No, but we had two more weeks. I have to go.

I kissed her forehead and got dressed, I walked out and rushed to my car. I drove back to my house, it didn't take long to be inside. Autumn sat on the couch.

Autumn: Where have you been?

Me: I told you where I was going, you called when I was just arrived in town to get some food.

I helped her up and grabbed the bag.

Autumn: You smell different. Ah!

I put her in the back of the car and drove as she screamed.

.....

My brothers and sisters finally arrived, I looked at the door waiting for the doctors to finally arrive. I sat there.

Me: We have been waiting for a little too long. Why are they not here?

The door opened and a doctor walked out.

Dr: Mr Black can we have a moment with you.

Me: This is my family, say whatever you want to say.

Dr:We have reached complications in helping your wife give birth. The baby is being strangle by the umbilical cord and your wife has lost a lot of blood,if we cut her to take out the baby we might prepare to lose her. Now in order to do this surgery you have to make a choice.

Me: Whatever you do, keep my wife alive. I don't want my wife dead.

Dr: You will need to sign the consent form agreeing to do this.

Me:Fine.

I signed and grabbed my coat.

Quarnia:Nathan.

Me:I am just walking out, I'll be back later.

I walked out and headed to my car. I groaned as I sat in my car, Autumn was going to die when she finds out that she was not bringing a baby home. I leaned on the staring and sat in silence.

MR SELANA

Me:Is she dead?

Billy:No,look at the booth.

I looked and moved back.

Me:Sam is dead.

Billy:Zane Bilson told me to tell you this,"One way or the other you will go to him on your own." By the way you forgot to mention that your daughter is dating a Bilson. Deal with this!

With that said,he walked out of the yard.

Me:The car damn it!

Billy:Deal with it!

He left me standing there,I closed the booth and walked inside the house.

Athandile:And?

Me: Your sister is dating a Bilson,a Zane Bilson.

Athandile:What?How?I am sure it's the money.

Me:He just threatened to kill me if I try again to hurt her.

Athandile: He's bluffing.

Me:Is he?

Athandile: Amahle is in love with Nqaba not this guy.

She dialled on her phone and called.

Athandile>Hello Amahle.

Amahle:What do you want?

Athandile: Why is your little boyfriend threatening to kill my father?

Amahle: What are you talking about?

Athandile: I see why he denied a child, it's because of you. You are still the miserable, selfish brat you were always were. You recruit someone to kill my father because yours is already dead. This is not over by long shot, tell him that you useless girl.

✓ GENESIS 29

UNGOWAM

The knock echoed as I sat watching a movie, it was dark outside and I should really learn to lock my gate. I walked to the door and opened, Genesis stood there.

Me: What are you doing here?

Genesis: I'm here to talk Liefie.

I moved and let him inside before closing the door. He sat on the couch.

Me: Anything to drink?

He looked at me.

Genesis: Felicity was basically my first love, we dated for two years then she was offered a job last year, in Sudan. I didn't want her to leave you know so I proposed, she felt that I didn't want to marry her because I wanted, I was trying to make her stay. We got in a fight and she left. I was crushed, tried calling but she didn't pick up any calls. I never told my mother and sister that we weren't dating anymore, Britney called her not knowing that.

Me: Ohh.

Genesis:Yes she didn't give me a chance to break up with her but I did.

I sighed.

Genesis:She didn't come back alone.

I looked at him confused.

Me: What?

Genesis:She was pregnant -

Me:With your baby?

I don't hate kids but the feeling that hit me,had me wanting to scream.

Genesis:Yes she's my baby.

Me:A little girl.

Genesis:I still feel the same way -

Me:No,no! You have a baby with another woman,a newborn baby. So you two will be bonding and I will have to understand? Forget it Genesis,I am not about to put myself in that.

Genesis: I will just be a father.

Me:A father?Why don't I just believe that huh?Oh wait your father was just being a father,dumped his fiancée for you and your mother. It sure feels like I am the fiancée right now.

Genesis: So you don't trust me?

Me: Trust is earned and right now you are far from having it. I don't trust anything coming out of your mouth, stay where you are Genesis.

Genesis: Why? I love you damnit!

I took deep breaths as I stood there.

Me: Right now I don't know if I made the right decision to fall for you, imagine MJ's daughter fighting for a spot in a man. All of this feels too familiar to ignore Genesis, I can't just pretend that your first love isn't here with your first baby. The first woman to be introduced to the family, now she is introducing your heir and they will be on her side. Damn do you feel that huh? I sure do.

Genesis: What should I do?

Me: You have to leave my house and forget this ever happened. I am pretty sure they will advise you to move in together right? For the sake of the child, she needs both parents.

Genesis: No, they are not moving in ever.

Me: I need you to leave.

Genesis: Ungowam -

Me: Please don't touch me, please.

He put his hands in his pocket and moved back.

Genesis:I will find a way to make this right.

Me:I don't want you to do anything,I just want you out of my house. Now Isaac.

It was weird for him not to have comebacks,he just walked to the door.

Genesis: You are mine, obviously it is not clear to you yet.

With that he walked out. I wrapped a hand around my mouth to stop the sob from coming out,the pain I felt was something that I wasn't expecting at all.



I was woken up by noise

Advertisement

I got up from my bed and walked to the window. My heart stopped as I realised that my gate was on the ground,I grabbed my gown and ran outside. I looked at the people working in my yard confused.

Me:Uhm excuse me!

They turned to look at me,a man walked towards me.

Man:Grey.

Me:What are you doing in my yard?

Grey: Mr Bilson gave us clear instructions to put a new fence,a new gate and windows.

Me:Mr Bilson didn't contact -

Grey: Should we leave everything?

I looked at the men taking down my windows and fence.

Me: Continue I'll call him.

I dialled his number.

Me:What the fuck are you doing Genesis?

Genesis:Oh hey liefie, I'm doing fine thanks and you?

Me: Genesis wha-

Genesis:I was just letting you talk yesterday and doing what you wanted me to do. Now if you thought just because of a child who just arrived in this world it's over,then you don't know me. I know what happened with Mom and Dad but I don't love Felicity in any way possible. First love not the first person to make me feel like you do. Now next time do greet first.

He dropped the call.

Me: He's bipolar this guy what the fuck?

AUTUMN BLACK

I did not see my husband the entire day and night. It was like karma, I knew that he was cheating just didn't know with who.

Quarnia: Hey.

Me: Hi.

Quarnia: How are you doing?

Me: I'm fine, I'm good. Have you seen Nathan?

Quarnia: I tried calling him but he isn't picking up.

Me: He's cheating on me, must be karma right?

Quarnia: Did you tell him?

Me: Tell him what exactly?

Quarnia: That you cheated on him long before you two married.

Me: We were just dating.

Quarnia: Then why are you being dramatic? If he's cheating then I bet you are going to understand in order to cover for your part.

Me: It's that girl.

Quarnia: What girl?

Me:I know where the perfume came from,he smelt like her when he didn't sleep at home.

Quarnia: Should I feel sad for you?

Me:I-

Nathan walked in.

Me:Where have you been?

Nathan: I parked outside and slept.

Quarnia:We thought you left the car.

Nathan:I just slept inside,saw the missed calls. How are you doing?

Me: I'm good.

Quarnia: I'll be back.

She walked out,he sat down.

Me:What happened with us?We usually do everything together but lately you have distanced yourself from me. Every chance you get is to stay away from me lately.

Nathan: Work is stressing.

Me: Stressing?I just lost my baby Nathan. Doctor said that a week before I shouldn't be alone but you were not there either,on holidays work is stressing Nathan. Who is she?

He chuckled.

Nathan:Who?

Me:Who is the woman you are sleeping with behind my back while I was pregnant?

Nathan: Worry about getting better. Me and your sister wife only want you to be alright.

I died.

Nathan: That's how I felt when I found out that you did the same but we're not dwelling on that. I have a woman I think could be my second wife, you either agree or don't agree, either way we are here. Now get better,it would be nice that you two meet. Let me get you something to eat.

He walked out,I sat on the bed struggling to comprehend what just happened.

Me:Huh?!

ZANE BILSON

Banging on the door echoed.

Me: I'm coming!

I opened the door.

Security: We tried to stop her.

Amahle stood there.

Me: It's fine, come in.

She walked in.

Amahle: I'm starting to believe everything Fleur said about you and your family.

Me: Okay let me wear my glasses first.

I wore them.

Amahle: Threaten to kill my father? Do you know that they think that I sent you to kill them?

Me: Yet they sent people to drug and kill you.

Amahle: I expected they would but now with you thinking violence is cute. Have you seen the damn news Zane?

Me: What are you talking about?

Amahle: My father released a statement that you threatened him, a recording of a guy speaking is everywhere. All in my name, do you know what people are saying out there about me? Ungrateful, a monster and should have died with my parents, all because I let you think you are my knight in shining armour.

Me: I was just helping you.

Amahle:How about you tell the person you are helping first?
Someone is dead in my name?Do you think that makes me feel
better?Why didn't I listen to Fleur before she decided to let you
be?Bilsons are not the people you are associate yourself with,I
have been suspended from reaching my dream you arse.

Me:Wha-

Amahle: You think such accusations and I will be let to stay
around other kids? I'm high risk to other students because of
you. Whatever you do from now on, keep my name out of your
damn mouth.

She turned,I just stood there.

Me:Selana is good at making himself a victim, let's see how he
does that in hell.

✓ GENESIS 30

AJ

I looked at the address again. I looked at the streets.

Me:Here we are.

People were standing outside,I parked and walked out of my car. A pastor walked to me in a hurry.

Pastor:Prophet-

Me:Call me Mrs Zarkina. What's going on?

Pastor:Mrs Zarkina,we were called last night because some boy started climbing walls. I came over and he was laying on the ceiling,used holy water and he came down and attacked. The junior pastor is at the hospital as we speak,I called others and we restrained him. We called around and we were told to call you.

Me:I don't do exorcism.

Pastor:Maybe you can heal the child, he's only 12.

I sighed.

Me:Show me.

I only had my cross nothing else on me. The house was upside down,I could hear screaming inside as they led me.

Pastor:We put a chain around the arch inside hoping that he doesn't take it down but it's cracking.

Silence as we walked.

Pastor:I guess the demon can feel your presence.

We walked in the room,the child stood there with chains tied to his wrists,he sure looked deranged. He looked at me.

Boy:Please help me,I don't know why they tied me.

I walked closer,he moved back until he leaned on the arch.

Me:Who are you?

Then he started laughing,stood straight looking right at me. A high pitched voice echoed in the entire room.

Boy:I was hoping that they call Lungile instead not you Avuyile. But it's a good thing they did.

Me:Who are you?

Boy: I spy with my little eye, something powerful than you.

Me:Father.

She laughed.

Boy:Lilith.

My blood ran cold.

Boy:I am getting to earth one way or the other.

I laughed.

Me:You really do believe that you can?The reason demons like you can't get to earth is because of what healers did years ago which burying the power of Hecate,here on earth. You wanted me to go and check if the power is still there so you could follow. You can keep sending your little bastard children on earth,I will send them back to you one by one. You will be here only if God allows you to.

I stepped closer.

Boy:You are making a horrible mistake,I will be here.

I grabbed him,he struggled screaming,I whispered the prayer as I held him tight. I could feel the darkness leaving,then the poor child started crying.

Me: It's alright,she won't come back to you.

He sobbed in my arms,he calmed and I put him down. He held my hands.

Me:She won't come back.

He didn't let go as he looked at me.

Me: What is your name?

Robyn: Robyn.

Me:As in Teen Titans?

Robyn: Promise?

Me:Pinky promise you she won't.

He hugged me.

Robyn: You are an angel,thank you.

Me:Untie him.

I let him go and walked out. I called Lungile.

Me:Good thing you didn't come,she was gunning for you.

Lungile: I could barely handle the sin demon, she's their mother. What kind prophet are you?

Me:The one who didn't blink while killing someone,fear isn't something I harbour.

BRITNEY

I walked in to find Felicity sitting on the couch.

Me:Ohh hey.

Felicity:Hi,do you know where Isaac is?

Me:At work?

I put the groceries on the table, the guards put the other plastics on the table.

Felicity: You still do his groceries?

Me: Every chance I do all their groceries but I try to stock for at least a month.

Felicity: You spoil them too much don't you think?

Me: Funniest thing, Isaac is the one who sent me to varsity and various colleges so I could obtain multiple certificates on fashion. I grew up as the child who loved making sure that people are well fed, my brothers grew up as the people who want everyone to study and they are still doing that. So I am doing what I love, they do what they love, I'm not spoiling anyone.

Felicity: I didn't mean to offend you.

Me: I was just telling you so that you don't assume next time.

I packed the groceries.

Felicity: So I was thinking of naming our daughter as Tia on honour of your mother.

Me: Don't you find it just too much? A child named after my mother with the world watching?

She looked at me confused.

Me:My mother is one of the greatest women in this world, her destiny and life now you want your child to live under that shadow of being compared to her grandmother?Give the child a chance to make her own mark not influenced by anyone.

She looked like she has been slapped.

Felicity: Did I catch you on a bad day?

Me:This is me everyday

just good at sounding like an angel most of the time.

Felicity:Is there something that I did?

Genesis walked in.

Genesis:Uhm what are you doing here?

Me: Dropping groceries.

Genesis: Felicity what are you doing here?

Felicity: You wanted to see the baby remember?

Genesis: Unfortunately I have back to back meetings to even think about this,I won't be here today.

Felicity:Will wait.

Genesis:I don't know how the security let you in my house without me but you are not waiting here. I'll come by and see

my daughter but you are not waiting here. My girlfriend can't be uncomfortable in my house because of you. Hey little one.

He kissed my cheek.

Me: Genesis.

Genesis: I was hoping that you do me a favour.

Me:What?

Genesis:Wait.

He hugged me,I knew that the brother I have was going to blackmail me.

Genesis:So I need you to decorate a house, you plan and I will pay.

Me:Now stop touching me.

He chuckled and let me go.

Me:Fine,email everything.

Genesis:I love you too now let me get my things and leave.

Felicity:The baby is here.

He turned and walked to the baby lying on the couch, playing on its own. He looked at the baby.

Genesis: What is her name?

Felicity:I was thinking that your mother's name -

Genesis:No.

He picked her up,she giggled and tried grabbing his face.

Genesis: Allison.

Felicity: It's a nice name, would your surname be fine?

Genesis: We're not married,she can't use my surname at all.
She'll do that on her own.

Felicity:But you -

Genesis:Was born in a country that didn't allow me to have my
mother's surname. Her surname is yours.

He put her down and walked away.

Me:Well you are just the egg donor after all. Terrific.

GENESIS

Me:This would be a great proposal.

They all nodded.

Me:Then make it like that and I want it sent to me immediately.
You can leave.

They walked out,I looked at the email Britney sent.

Me: She's trying to milk me dry, don't you think?

I heard footsteps,my little brothers walked in.

Me:Okay what is going on here?

Zane: Women are so complicated.

Me:Tell me about it.

Xander: I am having no problems as far as I am concerned.

Me:Lucky you.

Xander: Except one thing.

Zane:Amahle drove all the way from Varlia to give me a piece of her mind,I didn't know that it was trending. Now I think her father should really die.

Me: You are just making things worse.

Zane: What's the use?She doesn't want to talk to me anymore,I am sure that AJ's little demon is so happy.

Xander:Say that again. She's cute but damn her mouth, she responded to my text on some "Get a life bro,this is not fanfiction". Blocked.

I laughed.

Xander:I call her and she answered.

Zane:And?

Xander:"Okay now boy boy are you horny or something?One hand match isn't that complicated,I would recommend Brazzers." Damn her kindness is shortlisted,she flips faster than a coin.

Me: Ungowam thinks that Felicity is here to replace her.

Zane:The fact that you want to make MJ's daughter a young stepmother should be a red flag. You Xander out of all people want AJ's daughter. What do you guys smoke?I sure hell need it.

Xander: What is that suppose to mean?

Zane:Look at this,how long do you plan on keeping it low huh? Women don't like to be secrets, Ungowam isn't going to be 20 something forever,she must have dreams of wanting to be married,have kids,a big house and a husband that loves her. She grew up in that,now she's got you who is keeping her a secret,no proof that you might even marry her one day.

We looked at him.

Zane: That's the reason I didn't have any long relationships because I didn't want to give anyone false hope that I would marry them,more reasons that I used condoms. You can't keep fighting for her when you are not even giving her the assurance that she's for keeps.

Xander:Why does he have to make sense?

Me:I feel guilty.

Zane:On top these girls' parents would rather die than see you marry each other. Fleur knows everything Mom did to hers,do you understand that kind of hate won't just disappear?Okay Ungowam might love you but she can't ignore that you played a part in many incidents so did your mother. How on earth do you bring those families together when they haven't healed from the traumatic events?

Xander:Eish, what's worse those incidents still fresh. Did you hear how Fleur spoke?

Me:So how about we try and redo everything? Like try to apologize for example,give back things we have forcefully taken from anyone one by one or try to negotiate something.

Xander:Like you?

Me:Me?

They laughed.

Zane: Genesis is the first book in the Bible, basically the start of everything.

Me:Like try to mend what we can,then the parents might follow. We can't really change what happened but we can try to create a better and united front.

Zane: Before that,since you are the first person to fall for the enemy you need to be sure of what you want to do with Ungowam.

Xander:Why are you not using your wise words huh?

Zane:Twin it's easy to advise everyone but can't use the same advice on yourself ever.

✓ GENESIS 31

FLEUR

I laughed until I couldn't feel my intestines. I finally stopped and looked at him.

Me: What do you use? Morphine? Are you crazy? Fact that we are here in public and you trying to ruin my life.

Nathan: I can't just forget what we shared Fleur, I can't.

Me: Your wife just lost her child, your child and you want her to die even more. What is wrong with you?

Nathan: Tell me to go away right now.

I looked at him stunned.

Me: What are you doing huh? You are married, what we did isn't right Nathan and I don't know what you want me to do. I can't just be the woman who broke you and your wife.

Nathan: You don't understand, what I feel for you is unexplainable. I don't want to just forget you just like that.

He did the unexpected, pulled me to him and kissed me. I just let him stunned, what brought me back to life was flashes. I moved away from him.

Me:Are you crazy?

I walked out of the restaurant.

Nathan:Fleur!

Me:I am going to trend do you understand that?

Nathan:So that is your problem? Trending? Don't you want me?

Me: I'm beginning to regret letting you in my pants, you are so toxic. Let me go.

Nathan:Let me drop you off.

I sighed as I got in the car.

Nathan:I want you not to be treated as secret in my life,I want to acknowledge you.

I realised that I have been a secret the past few weeks in his life and I didn't like it. Now here he was giving me a chance to be known and somehow fear wasn't allowing me to. I was thinking about almost everything.

Me:My mother is going to kill me and disown me.

Nathan:Yes she might not like that we're together considering how our families are like.

Me:I never want to disappoint my mother.

Nathan:Were you going to marry someone she likes or you like?

Me: Both.

My phone rang.

Me: Mahle.

Amahle:What is this?

Me: What is what?

Amahle:Bitch you are trending.

Me:Oh God!

My phone vibrated again.

Me: I'll call you. Leilani.

Leilani:Wait till Mom sees this.

Me:Are you enjoying this Leilani?

Leilani: Enjoying that the perfect big sister of mine just did the unthinkable, sleeping with a married Dr Black. The same girl who was preaching about staying away from guys with girls. What happened?Peer pressure got you?

One thing about the demon I called little sister,she had no remorse and would make sure that you suffer everytime.

Leilani:I will gladly show her the post.

Me: Why would you do that?

Leilani: When you were sleeping with a married man what were you expecting? If it was someone's boyfriend I would have minded my business but now nope.

Me: You are so annoying, you little demon.

Leilani: You are calling me a demon while you have been wrecking a marriage. "No, he came to me knowing he's married." You agreed knowing that he's married. Take responsibility.

Yeah I wasn't really AJ's mini version, Leilani was the exact version of my mother.

Leilani: Don't worry I got you if anything goes south but Ro what were you thinking? That you could keep it a secret? How about your mother? A whole prophetess who is going to explain how did her own daughter get that far? The fact that you out of all people was this selfish, beats me.

I felt like crying, Leilani knew how to rip you apart.

Leilani: I am going to have to avoid people because you are trending for something you could have avoided. A man almost twice your age, what is with you? Doesn't Dad love you that much? Or what exactly?

Me: Just stop talking Leilani.

Leilani:As if I did something wrong. Better come home soon
Fleur if you do desire living past 30. Bye.

I fanned my face struggling to stop the tears.

Nathan:Are you okay?

Me: Just get me home.

The moment we arrived,I got out and ran inside.

Amahle:What happened?

Me: Leilani,she-

Amahle:That little demon.

Me: What was I thinking? What happened to not falling for the
guy huh?I had my head in the clouds for so long.

My phone rang,I looked at the screen.

Me: It's my father.

Amahle: Answer.

Me:Daddy.

Dad:Hey Ro how are you doing?

Me:Good Dad and you?

Dad: Your mother hasn't seen anything,I think you be here and
tell her yourself. I booked a ticket for tonight.

Me:Where is she?

Dad:She is home, occupied by your siblings on purpose and I have her phone. Leilani is even singing.

I chuckled,my little demons.

Dad:Hope you do have an explanation for trending like this with your face my love. Have you a good evening.

Me: It's not even two hours and I am trending, everyone knows.

Amahle: Social media and you two are known.

Me: Avuyile Jange is going to bury me alive, literally.

GENESIS

Me:Okay?

Britney: I can't believe it too.

Xander walked in.

Xander: Believe what?

Britney: That I am thinking of going blonde.

Me:Huh? That's not-

Britney: Genesis you do believe that -

Me: Britney the thing is trending, he'll eventually find out.

Xander: What?

Me:Fleur isn't ignoring you just because, Nathan is smashing her.

Xander:This is a joke, Nathan is married right?

Me:Yes he is.

Xander:Then what are you saying?

Me:Show him. Do you have everything?

He pushed the box forward.

Xander: Ohhhh.

Britney:Sorry.

Xander: Can't really expect her to like me back,come on.
Disappointing but it's cool guys, don't fret.

Me: You are hurt.

Xander: You don't know anything!

With that he walked out of the house.

Britney: Should I?

Me:No,let him scream it out. He'll be back and will talk.

Britney:I guess this house is done and dusted.

Me: You did a great job.

Britney: Make a video of her when she finally gets the amazing job

Advertisement

I have made in her home. I love you.

Me: Love you too.

She walked out of the house, I looked around. It sure looked different. I called Ungowam.

Me: Where are you?

Ungo: Outside.

I turned on the camera and waited for her to walk in. She stepped in looking at the door.

Ungo: I swear-

She gasped dropping her keys on the floor, she looked around in awe .

Me: Do you like it?

She looked at me blinking tears away.

Me: Liefie.

Ungo: It's breathtaking, it's different.

Me: Come here.

She did as she sniffed.

Me:I just wanted to do something nice for you.

Ungo:Thank you so much, it's beautiful. Thank you so much. Oh wow.

I chuckled.

Ungo: Your sister is gifted,thank God the HOJ has her. It's like she was reading my mind when doing everything. I love her.

Me:She is your sister in-law.

Ungo: We're not married.

Me:I want us to do something,well talk. I know we have been talking only lately because I didn't want to pressure you.

Ungo: What is wrong?

Me:I want to make our relationship official.

Ungo:But?

She moved back.

Me:I think me and you are the people who can bring our families together. I believe that we have to talk to them.

She looked at me stunned.

Ungo: You are serious?

Me:I don't want my kids to go through what I am going through ever,I am sick but your aunt refuses to help me all because she did before.

Ungo:What do you mean she did before?

Me:My mother had a complicated birth,I was born before time well AJ showed up and told the doctors that I was going to be born without a heartbeat. Of course no one believed her,she stayed and I was indeed with no heartbeat. They had to call her back,they don't know what exactly she did but she kept me on her chest. She just sat there for nearly two hours,at the time my heart was going slow but they can see that it was coming.

I sighed.

Me:She gave me a chance at life, for a year my mother was unconscious so they let her take me. Funny I still remember everything.

Ungo: I had no idea.

Me: Despite everything my mother did to her, that woman basically gave birth to me. My mother is so proud to accept the truth and I can't have that,I am trying to keep afloat because of her. I know everything my mother has done wrong here Ungowam, you should know what your family has done wrong too. What your mother did, what your grandfather did and

everything. Acting like they didn't play any part in this, isn't going to help ever.

Ungo:I know.

Me:She named me Isaac then Genesis.

Ungo:Aunt AJ?

Me: Genesis is my middle name,she said everything will start with me.

I opened the box and handed her the frame,it was a picture of me as a baby with AJ,few words written on the corner of the picture.

Ungo:Looks the same.

Me:Like wine,gets finer every year.

Ungo: What do we do?

Me:Make them see the truth.

Ungo:Aunt AJ scares me.

Me:I will talk to her tomorrow. Come here. We'll do this right this time.

MJ

Phiwe:Fleur is savage though.

Me:Mhm.

Zac:Good?

Me:I am just thinking, what if this is already written?That the kids will cross paths.

Phiwe:Like falling for each while the families are at war.

Me:Yeah.

Zac:That could be true.

Me:Am I really ready to just accept?

A knock echoed and the door was opened. Ungowam walked in.

Ungo:Looks like everyone is here.

Me:Yes.

Ungo:I need to show you this.

We looked at the pictures.

Phiwe:I have been asking myself what is happening with your house. It's looking good.

Me: Congratulations baby.

Ungo: Genesis is responsible.

Me:Heh?

Zac:What?!

Ungo:Genesis asked his sister to do all of this.

Mom:Tia's son.

Ungo jumped to see my mother walking in.

Ungo:Granny.

Me:Do share why?

Ungo: We're dating,look I understand that you might not like my choice.

Mom:Dating that woman's son isn't a choice. A leopard never changes its spots,she kept me in a tube for years just to trap my daughter so she could put her in asylum. Killed people to keep that secret along with your mother.

She took a deep breath.

Mom: Your choice at the end but don't expect me to accept. Do whatever you want!! lost years of my life because of my own brother whom I still resent this day and he's dead! Your Tia Petra is alive,imagine!

With that said,my mother returned back to the kitchen.

Ungowam stood there.

Ungo:This is going to be harder than I thought.

Me: You want us to forgive them?

Ungo: Everyone isn't innocent, you bombed plans.

Me: Who are you trying to justify? Tia? Where is she?

Ungo: We have to find a way forward.

Me: For who? You and Genesis? Can't you find it in the new testament? You want him, go ahead, it's your heart not mine but if you think I'll just forgive, I can't even forgive myself. Forget it.

Ungo: Mom please.

Me: Forgiveness is earned.

Ungo: Forgive us as we forgive those who trespasses against us.

Me: Have you ever seen go to church? The same God that watch me suffer in this earth? Fuck him and that bull coming out of your mouth!

I walked out.

✓ GENESIS 32

NATHAN

Autumn:Are you happy?

Me:I love her! Just like I love you!

Autumn:Madness and bull Nathan, she's a child!

Me:Love is blind.

Autumn:Are you serious right now Nathan?Are you fucking with me?Talk to him.

My sibilings looked at me.

Dad: I think we are good at watching.

Autumn: Everyone is talking about it, social media is never going to let this go!Why?

Me:I love her.

Autumn:Is someone going to talk to him?

Niva:Yes.

I looked at my little brother.

Me: He's not going to change my mind if that is what you are trying to get.

Niva: I'm not planning to change your mind.

Me:Go ahead.

Niva:If she's not good enough divorce her.

Everyone gasped.

Me:I love her.

Niva: Autumn should just divorce you then.

Nia:That went south fast.

Niva:Dad had to choose if he wanted to continue hurting Mom or what. You think you are like him?Have your bread buttered both sides?Mom according to you guys,the people that still remember her,wanted love and peace. She protected you.

Dad:Wha-

Niva:We were all adopted in this house,did Mom ever made any of us compete for her?She didn't let you compete for her love but here you are. Untethered, you proposed to Autumn,introduced her to us so we could see your better half. Now untethered yet again, you drag her around like a dog with rabies. Don't want her anymore,divorce her and move to Fleur if that is what you want. We,I am not going to pretend what you are doing is right. Choose, make a choice and be sure that you are going to live with it.

He got up.

Niva:Right now, you should start praying that the Prophetess doesn't let you play hide and seek with the demons she kills. I have to go.

He walked out.

Quarnia:Coming.

One by one they all walked out.

Autumn:Tell me what went wrong exactly.

I just stood there looking at her.

Autumn: I'll just go and sleep.

I sat there before dialling Fleur's number.

Fleur:I said don't call me, I'm on my way home.

Me:Are you alright?

Fleur: I'm fine, I'll call you later. Bye.

I sat there.

UNGOWAM

I knocked at the door.

Voice:Come in.

I opened and Kveta was sweeping.

Me:Hi.

Kveta:Hello.

Me: Is your Mom here?

Kveta:In the dining room.

I walked in the dining room, Leilani and Ash were busy plaiting her hair.

Me:Good morning.

AJ:Hi.

Leilani:So early in the morning Ungowam?

Me: Just here to talk to my aunt.

Ash: About?

Me:My love life.

Leilani:Better keep it there sis, we'll be back.

I looked at them as they walked out.

AJ: Your heart is heavy.

Me:What would it take for all these families to forgive each other huh?Who knew that I would fall for Tia's son this much?

AJ: I don't know actually.

Me: I believe that you are the one capable of making this happen Mamncane.

AJ:Me?

Me:My mother blames herself for everything that happened to you,she thinks she didn't protect you enough. She's not forgiving because you are not either Makazi.

She looked at me.

AJ: What do you want exactly?

Me: To find it in your heart to forgive even if you haven't received,face the people that hurt you. They are being dealt with by karma but you are not bulging.

AJ: I will think about it after ten years.

Me:Ten years?What am I suppose to do in the meantime?

AJ:I don't know nor do I care.

Me: Mamncane -

AJ: Forgiveness isn't like passing a ball, you think by today I'll just decide to forgive someone. It takes time just like a grudge, you are in love that is cute but don't expect everyone to fall in that plan. I would definitely think about it if me and Tia face off.

Me:Wha-t?!

AJ:She always sent people to do her job,I did my job on my own. Now if you want me to think about what you are saying,get her to agree to fight me.

Me: That's crazy.

AJ:She always avoided facing me because the technique she was trained with was just creche stuff to me.

Me:Where did you train?

She laughed.

AJ:Three countries, Japan,Russia and France. So dear,get your mother in-law to fight me and after I shift all of her bones, I'll help you get the families together a-

Fleur walked in with a bag.

AJ:Aurora?

Fleur:Hey Mom.

She hugged her.

Fleur: Ungowam.

AJ: It's not holiday yet,why didn't you say that you were coming?

Cesar:We knew.

AJ: You were picking her up? What's going? Whose birthday is it? You are not pregnant right?

Cesar: Sit down honey.

AJ: Baby is everything alright?

Fleur: I'm trending.

AJ: For?

Fleur: For uhm, this guy, ehm kissed me in public.

Aunt AJ looked at her confused.

AJ: So?

She got up.

Fleur: A married guy.

She paused.

AJ: Who?

She shook as she sat there, AJ looked at Uncle Cesar.

AJ: Fleur talk, why are you shaking when I am just calm.

She was so calm, way too calm.

Fleur: I don't know what was going on, I couldn't stop him and I slept him.

AJ: Slept with him? How long?

Fleur: Three weeks

Advertisement

I just couldn't stay away from him, he makes me so happy and I realise how wrong I was for wrecking his marriage. I didn't mean to.

Aunt AJ walked to her and took both hands.

AJ: Calm down and answer my questions. Who is he?

Fleur: Nathan Black.

Aunt AJ just raised her eyebrows.

AJ: Didn't his wife give birth three weeks ago? Well, lost the baby.

Fleur nodded.

AJ: You are younger than his own younger brother, right? So tell me where did you learn that you could be a second option for a married man?

She had no response.

AJ: Okay, he came to you but no, you played "I'm not the one who owes his wife loyalty" right? I know Aunt Aliza fell for someone's fiancée, understandable. Who do you know that took someone's husband? Imagine my daughter as a mistress, what were you thinking?

Fleur: That I fell for him.

AJ: Explain it to me Fleur, I want to understand how and why?
Were you running out of money?

Fleur: No Mamas, I just fell for him and I love him.

AJ: Is he going to leave his wife and marry you? So you are going to build your home in his wife's tears? Answer the questions Fleur Zarkina.

Fleur: I don't know.

She chuckled and let her hands go.

AJ: At least everyone is falling for the other people. Do you understand that someone's daughter is asking themselves what is wrong with them? Probably thinking it's because she hasn't given birth, or still fresh or leaner, darker, nice hair and better personality. You are responsible for that. Do you know?

Fleur: No, I-

I don't think any of us could have expected what happened next. She backhanded Fleur, almost knocking her down.

AJ: Don't steal, don't commit adultery yada yada commandments. You come in my house and tell me crap about falling for an older and married man. It's love. Love? Answer me damn child!

She jumped up.

AJ: You are going sit up straight and answer every damn question! What do you know about love huh?Is it suppose to hurt someone?

Fleur:No Mamas.

She was cracking.

AJ:Why would you do that huh?If this man is suppose to be yours,he should have divorced his wife then be with you. But you enjoyed it! Didn't you?

Fleur: I'm sorry,I just did what I felt wa-

AJ:Since when Aurora?Since when do you do things stupidly?Here I am thinking that you know everything you can't do. If you think you are sleeping in my house after this crap, clearly you don't know me. Book yourself back to your varsity,I don't want to see your face.

Fleur:Mamas-

AJ:I love you too but out of my house Fleur. If I get back from my bedroom, you will really understand why the world is scared. "I fell for him" Oh wow.

She walked as Fleur sobbed.

Me:Come on, let's go to my house.

I helped her up and walked to the door, her siblings looked so spooked. Leilani composed herself.

Leilani:Are you happy?

Me: Leilani please.

Leilani:We just saw our mother slap her, something she's never done or sworn that much. I'm in love nonsense just made all of us see a side we hear about on the news. Do leave.

We walked to my car.

Fleur:She never raised her voice nor hit any of us, that was the first.

Me: It's going to be alright.

BLACK CATALINA

Me:And?

Meri: Genesis was surrounded by salt, kicking me out. I can't get to him either but soon I'll be talking with Ungowam.

Me:The weapons are here,do you think this process could be faster?

Meri:If the Queen finds a better plan to get all other healers. Eight are completely missing, can't track them at all and I believe that AJ had something to do with it.

Me: What do you suggest?

Meri: You are a Manona right?

Me:I am.

Meri:Reach out to your family and find the seer.

Me:Seer?

Meri: Yvette Haven Manona-Kingston,that should be your cousin right.

Me:She lives in Spain not here anymore.

Meri:Then create something that will bring her home,we need her gift to the seven prophets before we kill her too.

Me:I can do that.

Meri:Do that.

Then dropped the call,I sighed. I dialled the number.

Voice:Hello?

Me:Hi,is this Zinnia Manona?

Voice: It's me.

Me:Black Catalina here.

Voice:I heard that you are back to town after years. What do you want?

Me: All I want is to see my father's grave, I realised that it was moved to the family cemetery which I am not allowed to because I don't have permission.

Voice: You can't blame them.

Me: Blame them for not letting me see my father's grave? That's too low even for them.

Voice: You killed two of your cousins Catalina.

Me: For what they did to our father, if you think I am sorry then you are talking to the wrong person. I want a ceremony to recognise me as a Manona, I deserve at least that.

Voice: Catalina call them?

Me: You think I didn't try?

Voice: Then let's go there and stop bothering me.

Me: We are the only children of Zamani Manona yet his inheritance was never given to us, I know that I was on that will.

Voice: Oh I know, I took everything because according to the world I am his only child. Now meet me in the homestead, if you think about killing anyone it will be your funeral.

Me: That damn bracelet.

Voice: Good girl.

✓ GENESIS 33

FLEUR

I sat on the floor looking at the call ,she was not picking up. One thing in this life I hated is hurting my mother. She was someone I never wanted see hurting and I did the worst,the cruelty that was worse,it was people commenting. They went as far as talking about how I just went too far considering who my mother is. It was brutal, they continued dragging me the most nothing on Nathan,well little. Other than that,I was being dragged left and right. A knock echoed.

Me:Come in.

Ungowam walked in.

Ungo:Hey. Did you sleep?

Me:I did, just woke up early.

Ungo:Look Aunt AJ will come around.

Me:I know she will but still stands,I did what I did.

Ungo:We all do something wrong okay?I cheated and someone winded up dead because of me. Some consequences might feel like hell but just know that your mother is angry,she has every right to be. Feelings are tricksters so is infatuation. Infatuation

has the ability of making you think that you are in love but you are nowhere close.

I looked at her.

Ungo:Re-evaluate everything Fleur,then be sure what you want exactly. I left the Mazda's keys on the table in case you want to go somewhere. There's a lot of food trust me.

Me: You don't have to be nice to me.

She paused.

Ungo: Someone made me realise that I am not as innocent as I want to be,I have said things that really attacked your mother and you hated me for that. The reason we are not getting along was started by me and I am sorry. I am hoping that you will forgive me.

Me:I am sorry too.

She hugged me.

Ungo:I guess we all have to forgive each other as a family before forgiving others.

Me: That's true and everyone owes my mother an apology.

Ungo:We do. Let me get going,go to the beach or something.

I got up and showered,got dressed and grabbed the car keys. I was definitely going to the beach and minding my business. I

left my phone in the car as I parked and headed down the beach. It was the beach where me and my family went to most of the time, it held so many beautiful memories. I walked around with my cap and sunglasses. It was refreshing to walk on the water, clear my mind and enjoy a little adventure. Right there without thinking, I realised that I was not in love with Nathan, it was indeed a crush that turned to an infatuation which was something I could have avoided. I walked to the restaurants not far from the beach. I walked in the Naia restaurant and took off my cap and glasses, people started recognising me and whispered as I walked in. I walked to an empty table and sat down.

Waitress: Good day Miss, here-

Her face scrunched as she realised who I was.

Me: Get another waiter then.

She walked back only to return with a brighter smile.

Waitress: Good day Miss Zarkina, here's a -

Me: Would like the king size burger, a shot and coke.

She looked at the menu on her hand.

Waitress: Coming up.

A woman walked to me.

Woman:How do -

Me:Ah no!What was he thinking sleeping with me when he knew that he's married? You think I care? You are the type going around shifting blame so you could forgive your excuse of a husband. He slept with someone,broke his vows. Why not ask him what was he thinking? What do I owe Autumn?Empathy nothing else,now if you have nothing else to share off my table or I will mop this floor with your face.

She looked stunned.

Me:Fleur this,fucken feminists low-key protecting men. You knew he's married, didn't he know that he's married?Fuck off.

I knew that I was going to trend yet again.

Me:I can't believe that I was sad because you have normalised belittling other women and protect your cheating husbands. I did what I did,not proud but I played my part and the rest is his. Now next person to come with that bull, they will know me. Fake people. Where is my damn order?!Or trying to poison me?

I got up and walked out. I was going to get ice cream instead.

Voice:Fleur.

I looked up and there was Xander standing with a woman on his side.

Me:Can I help you?

Xander:Are you good?

Me: What do you want from me?

Xander: I'm just aski-

Me: Ndidiniwe

Advertisement

I need a little bit of peace because I have to face another day.
(I'm tired).

He looked at me confused.

Me:Now out of my way.

GENESIS

I looked at my parents.

Dad: Reasonable.

Mom:How?

Me: Forgive yourself first.

Zane:I did something horrible,I didn't mean for it to happen.

We looked at him.

Zane:Might have scared my future father-in-law and he jumped
off a building and died.

Me:Zane!

Zane:Wanted to talk and he jumped.

Me: Because you don't listen ever!I told you to stay away from the man but no you just couldn't listen at all.

Zane: I tried okay?

Me: Amahle will look at you, should have thought about that.

He sighed and walked out.

Mom:Zane-Genesis.

Me:Mom he doesn't always listen and look at that. Right now you are also trying to escape the truth. Mom I am going to marry Ungowam,if your pride is going to stand between me and her happiness consider me not your child.

Dad:Isaac.

Me:No! Your wife would rather ignore things to make herself feel better and doesn't apologize. I don't care how or when but you are going to make sure that this year doesn't end without apologising for everything you did. We only have three months left. Think about it.

I walked out of the house and got in my car. My phone rang.

Ungo:Aunt AJ will only consider helping us with this if your mother agrees to a fist fight.

Me:Huh?

Ungo:Bad idea,anyone knows the consequences of fighting her. She want to wound your mother.

Me:But if that's what it takes,yes I'll tell her. How's your day going?

Ungo:Long and depressing,had to cover the prophets dying article. It is the most gruesome thing, they are all missing hearts.

Me:Did AJ say anything about that?

Ungo: Didn't get a chance to ask her. Fleur was there and it was bad.

Me:This Nathan thing?Out of all people I never really expected Nathan to cheat on his wife,worse entangle AJ's daughter in that.

Ungo:Wow.

Me: What?

She chuckled.

Me:What?

Ungo:I thought you were going to blame Fleur for sleeping with him,instead you said the opposite.

Me:Well he's the one who married someone and gave someone's daughter a chance to be a third person in the marriage. Can't honestly blame Fleur for everything,each person is responsible for their part, Nathan mostly is. Fleur was unfortunate to like him back, that's all.

Ungo: You are something.

I felt a sharp pain on my chest,I took deep breaths.

Ungo:Are you alright?

Me: Choked on my own saliva nothing. I'll call you when I get home.

.....

I heard a baby's cry as I walked to the front door and sighed.

Me:Not her.

I walked in,she was holding Allison and wearing close to nothing.

Me:How many times do I have to tell you to stop coming to my house?

Felicity: You were suppose to hang out with her remember?

Me: Today?

Felicity:Have been waiting here for the entire day. Are you ever free?

Me:No.

Felicity:Make time for your child.

Me: This is a baby,few months old, it's not like I will be breastfeeding her.

Felicity:We are suppose to be united and raise her together.

Me: Aren't we?

Felicity:I have to drive from my house to here.

Me:Get a house close by then.

Felicity: You think I can afford the houses here?

Me: I'm not your financial advisor why are you asking me?

I took Allison and she immediately calmed.

Felicity:She likes you even more.

Me: I'll hire a nanny and she'll stay here then.

Felicity: Without me? Forget it.

Me:Then I'll hire a nanny to stay with you.

She looked at me.

Felicity: What is it that I did to you?

Me:Princess you had your chance and you blew it. Next time you waltz in my house in whatever you are wearing,in hopes of

seducing me you'll see something. Get dressed, my girlfriend is coming and I want you gone.

Felicity: She feels threatened by me?

I looked at her and chuckled.

Me: You look starved Felicia.

AMAHLE

I sat in the car not knowing what to do before finally walking out and headed inside.

Mom: Hlehle.

I hugged her.

Voice: I am being tested.

I let her go and looked at Athandile. Everyone looked at us.

Athandile: This is your fault.

Me: He jumped.

Athandile: You sent your boyfriend.

Nqaba: Athandile we're mourning.

Athandile: She's finally here, going to sleep with her?

Me: I should leave.

Athandile: You should as always you are useless,not surprised.

I was provoked unnecessary,I grabbed the vase so fast and threw it at her. I watched in slow motion as it connected with her head,she let out a two seconds scream and fell on the floor as it shattered on the floor.

Me: While you were busy fucking my boyfriend and enjoying life with my money,I was studying you empty headed Barbie doll.

Nqaba picked her up as blood poured out of the wound.

Athandile: You are a psychopath.

I grabbed another vase.

Nqaba:Stop it.

Me: Everything here is my money!

I threw it on the floor,I grabbed the pictures hanging on the walls and threw them on the floor.

Me:He was not my father but my uncle who murdered my parents in cold blood so he could take everything in my name.

I grabbed the golf stick and crashed everything in the house.

Me:I was treated like a dog here.

Athandile: Someone stop her!

I was hitting everything then walked to the kitchen, opened all cupboards. I pushed everything out, falling and shattered, grabbed the pot and threw it at the window before walking out. I hit Athandile's car, shattering the front window before walking to my car. It felt rather nice.

✓ GENESIS 34

BLACK CATALINA

Me:And?

Dave: Everything is ready.

Me:Close the doors then.

I watched from the cameras as the doors locked, my men covered all of them in wire.

Me:The whole stadium is covered right?How many?

Sam:Over fifty thousand.

Me: Over fifty thousand?Ho ho ho.

I chuckled.

Me:Activate them now.

I looked at them turning them,I pressed the button.

Me:Excuse me,hello. Attention to all soccer lovers and soccer teams. Today you might not make it out alive because a certain woman doesn't want to give up power. You move,I blow you. Each person has a red light on them so if you move, you die. Can always try. Now let's talk about the time Italians were ruling, they killed people hundreds of people. Did you know

that Tia Petra burnt down a building with the employees inside and none survived,yet you sing her praises?How many people has AJ killed and you pretend like she's an angel?She killed even kids. Two people,I am condemned for life because it's your damn favourites. Know what?Rest in peace.

I think no one understood what I meant until the middle of the stage blew,I watched as the spectators scrambled. I closed my eyes for a moment,screams echoed so did the bombs. The ground shook,some frames falling on the floor and stopped. It was like there was never a stadium ever. I turned and walked out. I called Merihim.

Me:A loud and unavoidable message has been sent to AJ, it's either she gives up what you want or we'll continue killing more people.

Meri:li like you.

Me:I have to go.

I got in the car and drove where I was suppose to meet Zinnia. It was the homestead actually,she was leaning on the gate.

Me: Little sister.

Zinnia: You are here. Let's get going.

I looked at the security,they scanned me.

Me:Such high security for my arrival,I feel dangerous.

Zinnia:Cute.

I walked besides her.

Me: I'm sorry about Ziphi, I am sure Ndodi didn't intentionally want to kill him.

Zinnia: I'm over that Catalina.

We walked in the house,pictures of my father hung on the wall.

Me: What excuse did you give them to see me?

Zinnia:I didn't, they want to see you.

I was surprised to find all the Manonas including Hunter's mother.

Me:Feels like an ambush.

Grandma: There's no ceremony happening here for you.

Me: Expected because you have favourites. Let me think,Hunter and especially Erin had your only biological son murdered. His daughter left for dead,, thirteen and pregnant and for dead. His wife on a wheelchair but you didn't condemn him,did you?I get my revenge, suddenly it's Manonas versus Black Catalina. Weird right?

I sat down..

Me:Proves that you are hypocrites. I expected to see the seer,oh well she has been warned.

Zoe: You are a monster!

Me: Nothing compared to your dead sons.

She almost jumped on me but someone grabbed her.

Me: I just wanted to see the people who think that they are better than anyone. Hypocrisy at its best. You are going to start crawling to me to apologize when I am done.

Grandma: You are going to meet your match a-

Me: Funny part, I'll be taking thousands of people with me and you are going to remember me for centuries. I am sure you even dream about me. Watch the news, I am only beginning. It will feel like antichrist is choking you to the last days.

I got up.

Me: By the way, Haven won't hide forever from neither will the others. Did I tell you only three chosen prophets are left? Now nice to see you.

I walked out.

AJ

Me: Thixo wam! (My God!).

Newsreader: This is by far the country's record on death toll. 46 436 people were declared dead on the scene, 3000 more bodies

missing only and 241 survivors who were rushed to the hospital.

I looked at the news in shock,I didn't know what to say. My phone rang.

Lungile:Catalina is working overtime to get that power for Lilith.

Me: I'm not handing something that could get everyone killed simple as that. We just have to get rid of her.

Lungile: You mean murdering her?Are you out of your mind?

Me:I usually suggest something that I will do.

Lungile:AJ have you left your old ways?As a prophet killing people isn't part of the description.

Me:We do exorcism knowing very well what would happen to the possessed person.

Lungile: That's understandable.

Me:Catalina is going to die and you will be the pastor in her funeral or I will kill you too. God might have chosen me because of the extent I will go to right the wrongs.

Lungile: Because you don't blink when killing people? That's crazy.

Me: I'm going to kill Catalina,might as well take it up to your God,well our.

Lungile: Sometimes you just have to pray for a clearer way.

Me:Then wait while people die right?This is hilarious.

A knock echoed.

Me: I have to attend a visitor.

I dropped the call and walked to the door.

Genesis: Afternoon Aunt AJ. Can I come in?

Me:No.

He sighed and handed me a frame.

Me:I know this picture, what is it?

Genesis:Thank you for everything you did for me.

Me: You think that by falling for my niece everything will fall in place?Oh wait you think that your mother is the only person who should right their wrongs? You have no clue do you?

Genesis: About?

Me:All these people,Janges,Kingstons, Sanchez's,Tia Petra, you name them made enemies. I killed people, leaving their children and partners knowing that I did that. Your mother has done unspeakable things and living survivors know that. MJ was helping those families now imagine unity between you and Ungo. They will think she helped Tia,now my question are you that ready?

Genesis: I'm not going to let anything happen to Ungowam.

Me: I know sweetheart but you are not a saint, as far as I know an enemy is in your house waiting.

Genesis: What?!

Me: Ohh don't worry

Advertisement

he's just going to give you a hug after all you did murder his parents and wasn't anywhere close to being remorseful.

Genesis: Mom agreed to the duel.

Me: Because she believes that MJ might have beaten me, lol, I'm laughing my intestines are hurting.

Genesis: We want the families to heal.

Me: Then healing means telling the truth, giving families to bury their loved ones boy. By the way you are fine, I need you to live and see how this marvelous plan is going to work. You two think the world is going to stop when the families work together. I like your stupid hope, it's positive makes me want to be a nun.

He looked offended.

Me: Don't take me serious, I just like making people miserable a lot. You two are adorable and cute.

Genesis: You look serious.

Me:I know. Is there anything else?

Genesis: Nothing else,thank you.

Me:Okay now you can go away.

Genesis:For what it's worth,I am really sorry for everything my mother put you through and never apologised.

I looked at him.

Genesis:See you around.

Me: You see me when I want to see you,so see you around.

He chuckled and walked away. I looked at the framed picture.

Me: He's grown,sad,things are about to get worse.

My phone rang,I just picked it up.

Fleur: What do I do Mamas?

Me: Come home then. Fleur?

Fleur:Mom?

Me:I never gave birth to a side chick,I didn't bring a child to fall for married men. You love him?Does he love you?If he does why is he still with his wife huh? When you are here,I want answers to these questions.

I dropped the call, honestly I didn't blame her that much but falling for someone married was just off. You are basically a side chick, the woman who he goes to when he's tired of his wife no clear sign of leaving her. I married Ceasar because he wanted me and had me no one else, didn't have to question my place. Now Fleur has to be that second option type of girl.

Me: My daughter fighting for a spot in a man's life, he must be God hey.

GENESIS

I pressed the remote and drove in. I immediately stopped when I realised that my guards were on the ground dead, I took out my gun and walked around the house. Guards laid dead all over the yard, the house was dark as I walked in. I turned on the lights.

Voice: Hello Isaac.

Clicking of guns echoed in the entire house. I turned and the housekeeper was tied to the chair covered in blood, gagged and looking at me shaking. Men with their faces covered pointed their guns at me.

Me: Must be so dangerous.

Voice: Or used to be.

One of them took off their balaclava.

Me:Luther.

Luther:Old friend. Put your gun down.

Me:Or?

Luther: You know I targeted Felicity, offered her job in one of my companies, thinking she'd turn it down but she didn't. You weren't so in love as I thought then comes the pretty journalist. Mindblowing. Exciting.

Me: You dare-

Luther:Shhhhh don't say anything. Your sister is good at decorating,I love the bedroom theme. Glow in the dark right?The bathroom has beautiful little notes. Thoughtful.

Me: I'll kill you Luther.

Luther:Oh no I never went to her house,none of my men did but I am everywhere like a virus. Put the gun down Isaac or I will have to do something to the pretty woman.

I put it down,he picked it up.

Luther: You try something, your housekeeper will die and what's her name? Allison. Sit down.

I sat down.

Me: What exactly do you want?

Luther: Today marks two years since you and your brothers killed my father in cold blood.

Me: Your father was a crook.

Luther: Let me guess you are the punisher? Funny he was the greatest father and you ripped him like nothing, then took everything of his and we were left with nothing. No remorse, no empathy because you didn't give a damn. Wait your family was friends with ours, your mother did a decent thing and attended the funeral. My mother committed suicide few days ago, she was never the same because no one believed her. Who would? Believe her over the Bilsons? Crazy but I knew exactly what you are capable of.

Me: Yet you are here.

He laughed.

Luther: Your problem you think that you can protect yourself from me. If I can't get to you or your girlfriend or child, I will get to someone and you will notice.

Me: I will hunt you down.

Luther: If you think that I am traceable as you think, I will give you a week and see how far you go. After that I am not going to stop, I am going for the blood until you and your brothers die. Now that is me being at least nice.

Me: You really do think you are invisible? I feel for you.

Luther: Your problem you think you'll forever stay untouchable, as long as you are on earth everything has an expiring date. One week.

They walked to the door.

Luther: Ohh by the way your sister, cooks very delicious meals. Wait what's his name? Wait your aunt is a Manona right? Your girlfriend is a Manona, like I said if I can't touch you or your siblings, I will touch someone who will send a clear message to you.

He walked out, I untied my housekeeper and called Xander.

Me: Hey, we have a problem. Huge. All my guards are dead and lastly, Luther Castle killed them.

✓ GENESIS 35

UNGOWAM

Me:Guards?

Genesis: Precautions.

Me:Why?

Genesis: There's someone who just showed up and knows that we're dating.

Me: You do understand that there are no precautions on my job? What kind of danger is it?

Genesis:Funny your aunt said this but-

Me:Said she was joking. It's written on her face that she's not joking.

Genesis:I don't know how dangerous this person is but you know vengeful people.

Me: What did you do to him?

Genesis: Nothing you need to worry about.

Me:I could look hi-

A knock echoed.

Me: I'll call you back. Bye, love you. Come in.

A man walked in, he looked not older than Genesis. He did look like a catch but not for me though.

Man: I was told that you are the right journalist to talk to.

Me: Ohh okay, please sit down.

I took my notepad.

Me: I'm Ungowam Manona and you must be.

Man: Luther Castle.

Me: Classic.

Luther: Martin Luther King right?

He chuckled.

Me: Oh definitely that.

Luther: I guess my parents named me in hope of fighting for injustice, I am on the right path then.

Me: What brings you here?

Luther: My father worked in the arms deal for the country with his companies as a cover up.

Me: Illegal?

Luther:Not it was legit until certain people discovered that he was the one helping government.

I pressed my recorder.

Me: Certain people?

He opened his laptop bag and handed me a file.

Luther: It's copies of everything my father did,records of who he met and when. Voice notes until he was murdered. Funny the police disclosed that the 'car accident ' was not real.

Me: What do you mean?

Luther:Can someone end up with five bullets and it's an accident?

Me:No.

Luther: Government took everything and sold it to the same people that killed him.

Me:Who are these people?

Luther:The Bilsons. My father only agreed to supply them for a certain period of time, when he was tied because he was making enemies everyday and threatened to tell the truth.

Me:They silenced him.

I didn't know what to do.

Me: You have almost everything to build a case.

He laughed.

Luther: The same case that was ignored and marked accident. I am beginning to realise that the so called Vorcans couldn't help because their daughter is in love with a Petra.

Me: Huh?

Luther: Lola Vorcan and Ziphi Petra, the cousin to the Bilsons.

I was honestly guilty.

Luther: I think the editor chose you because you have went against these people.

Me: I was fired, plus I don't do such stories anymore.

Luther: Okay, at least I know where you stand. You'd rather protect a criminal unlike your mother, you must have been adopted.

Me: Okay now you need to leave.

Luther: Must have threatened you too? I lost my home, privileges, my father and my mother killed herself because no one refused to listen to her. Now I understand why victims never get a chance, it's people like you choosing who to expose. I hope you sleep better at night knowing families are

out there hustling because their breadwinners were ripped off. Protect them as much as you, someone will listen.

Me: I am sorry for what you went through, seriously I am. Insulting me isn't going to help you anywhere else.

He got up taking his papers and chuckled.

Luther: This was a test and you failed.

Me: Test?

Luther: That now your ethics have changed.

He handed me an envelope, I looked at the pictures inside of me and Genesis.

Luther: Now I think you should call him and say that the person who is making him hire security for you was actually breathing the same air as you. Oh damn I can already imagine the article, oh it will be on before tonight. When that article airs it will be AJ vs Tia and MJ all over.

I looked at the man in shock.

Luther: "Oh my God MJ helped Tia?" I know she did not but as a journalist I am sure you know how fast conclusions are made. You will be questioned, as a person but now your family will be implicated. Long serving President and First Lady were nothing but criminals all because of you.

Me: What do you want?

Luther: Just showing your boyfriend that I will get to anyone and anywhere. Call him sweetness.

He walked out,I grabbed my phone and called Genesis.

Me:He was here Genesis!

Genesis:Who?

Me:Luther Castle!He has pictures of you and me in your room, everything and said it's going to trend. He's going to tell everyone I refused to help him-

Genesis: Because you are sleeping with me,then your parents get implicated in helping my mother.

Me:Do you know if it gets out,it will be the past again?AJ vs Tia Petra and MJ. You do know that if that gets out Aunt AJ will refuse to help at all?Fleur,God! Do something,give him whatever he wants,World War 3 isn't something we want. Oh God!

I put the call down and bit my nails,the fear that wrapped around me was enough for me to want to jump off the highest building.

FLEUR

Me:I made a horrible mistake, didn't I?

She just looked at me without moving.

Me:Mom?

Mom: I'm letting you talk.

Me: Your eyes are white.

Mom: Don't mind that, continue with your talk.

Me:I don't think I really love him,I was physically attracted and didn't about the fact it will blow. I mean it's been a month and he's never told me why he chooses to cheat.

Mom: You asked him?

Me:Yeah never really answered.

Mom: You were easy that's why.

Me:Ouch.

Mom:Oh come on,he didn't give you anything that shows he's no longer in love with his wife. Left you to attend to her. What did he tell you?That they sleep in different bedrooms yet he hasn't mentioned anything about divorcing. Hayi nawe.

Me:I just thought.

Mom:Whose mental health? You are trending for sleeping with a married man at the same time he was expecting a baby!Do

you understand that you could have done something? Again Fleur when someone wants you, they will do whatever it takes to show you. What has Nathan Black done? Oh wait, come at you at night, fucked you back to sleep and returned home in the wee hours of the morning. With his wedding ring still on his finger, can't call him at night or yada yada blah bleh.

Me: I didn't think it like that.

Mom: I'm a Prophetess do you understand that Fleur? I didn't decide for my children to be some saints but I didn't think giving you that freedom, I'd be disrespected to this extent. Heh marn love doesn't hurt, boast blah blah. I taught you that, don't you love yourself? I mean how low is your self-esteem that you would settle for side chick position?

Me: I'm sorry.

Mom: You don't owe Autumn anything but you owe yourself therapy Aurora. There's everything wrong in letting yourself be second best to a man, second option, a man who has to minimise his time between you and the woman he married.

Mistress? Side chick? Second wife? If he can stay in a relationship with his wife and cheat on her, what makes you think he can't stay in a relationship and cheat on you too?

I just sat there feeling more ashamed.

Mom:I don't want you waking up one day and regretting decisions that you should have never made. If someone wants you as much as you do,let their actions speak louder than words. Do not ever lower your standards to accommodate a man who won't lower his for you. In fact call him and say that if he wants you,why is he still with his wife?Call him.

I dialled his number ,it rang unanswered. Didn't my mother laugh?

Mom: He'll call after getting away from his wife.

Few minutes later,my phone rang.

Nathan:I saw your missed call,I was worried about you.

Me:If you want me,why are you still with your wife?

Nathan:Look I have been meaning to talk to you about this

Advertisement

I wanted to talk to you both.

Me: About?

Nathan: About you getting to know each other,I really do want this workout.

Me: As in polygamy?Are you kidding me?

My mother wasn't helping as she rolled laughing,I wanted to cry.

Nathan: That's why I want to talk to -

Me: I am twenty two years old and you want me to be a second wife?Hayini.

Nathan: When you are here we'll talk more clearly about it.

Me: What have I done?Yooh look I am not coming and I am never coming ever. Last term I'll do it online at home in Trenius, you are out of your damn mind. Who said that I want to get married huh?Let alone second wife!Yohh hayi.

I dropped the call and turned my phone off.

Mom:Oh no you are going back to Varlia and face your problems.

Me:Mom.

Mom:Ey, you are not going to run because you don't want to face them. Face them!

Me: I thought I really loved him you know.

Mom: You don't date a crush, Lindokuhle was a crush who showed his obsessive behaviour later on. Instead I married a broke French guy.

Me:Dad wasn't broke.

Mom:Were you there when I met him?So he was so broke he shared a room with his siblings,ten in one room and wore these

oversized clothes. He smelt like rotten tomatoes and I offered to bath him.

Me: Bath him?

Mom: I did actually, I needed rough salt, vinegar, pepper, bleach and some powder soap.

I just laughed.

Mom: The water looked so black, I couldn't find him and he's white. He looked like I boiled him. Then I grabbed my gun and told him to marry or I would kill everyone.

Me: Mamas no.

Mom: He peed and had no option, I am very convincing with this smile.

Me: What smile?

I laughed, it was actually what I loved about my mother, she changed the mood by just switching without even noticing. You literally realised a second later that she changed the subject.

Mom: Poor guy married me.

Dad: Your mother sure knows how to ruin a memory.

Me: Tell me about it.

Mom: I built him.

Dad:My Bob the Builder huh?

Mom:Duhh. See Fleur?

Me:Ma?

Mom:Love is beautiful, it's not suppose to bring misery. Thing about this life,it goes around and comes back around. You can't expect to build a home in someone's tears and be surprised when that person bewitch you, sometimes love isn't just enough. Safety,kindness and generosity. Peace, communication and vulnerability. The person who loves you would rather die next to you than watch. You might love Nathan but he needs to set his priorities but if you keep making things easy for him, he'll be comfortable to a point you will just accept whatever he gives you.

Dad:She hated my existence only because she didn't believe that she liked me.

Then my siblings sat next to me, more like on me. Kveta laid on my lap,Ash wrapped my arm around him kissing my cheek and Leilani was busy undoing my hair.

Dad:Funny thing, she hated me but not once she tried to kill me as promised. The woman would pop at my office, just because she can,yet she wanted me to die.

Leilani:I want that love.

Mom:He was weird, what was I suppose to do?

Ash:Admit that you liked him?

Mom:Oh my gosh eww no!

We laughed. Lesson learnt Mother.

Dad:She gave me hell though,she didn't show up on any dates until I went to her office and gave her a piece of my mind.

Mom:I wasn't scared, just warned so I didn't want to die.

Kveta: You went to the date because you felt warned?Oh wow Mamas you are a sore loser.

Mom:Kakade.(Obviously).

MJ

Me: Who is Luther Castle?

Ungo:This is all I got Mom.

Me:I wasn't really into any arms deal,the minister of Justice unfortunately died to respond. This guy hasn't appeared ever since his father died?

Ungo:Well clearly he's been appearing everywhere just not on the system.

Me:Why would he contact you?

Ungo: Apparently yesterday marked the death of his father, Thursday article shows that Tina Castle committed suicide because she felt like justice failed her. This guy just wanted to see what side am I on?

Me: You refused to do your job, were you expecting him to understand? You did an expose on us but you can't on your boyfriend? Well clearly he knows where your loyalty lies. Wait he does?

Ungo: Said that it will be AJ vs Tia Petra and MJ.

Me: Why don't you just say everything?

Ungo: He's going to post pictures of me and Genesis, share that is the reason I refused to help him. He said that it will make it look like you really did help Tia when everything comes out.

Me: You are scared of the world finding out that you two are dating? He's doing you a favour.

Ungo: Mom this puts you and Dad in danger.

Me: You are so worried about things that doesn't matter. I didn't help Tia Petra in anything, I'll say it over and over again.

Ungo: But Ma, Aunt AJ might think otherwise.

Me: Ungowam you can't want to build a relationship and expect smooth sailing. Of course problems will come and you will face them.

Ungo: You are not worried.

Me:I am worried Ungowam, worried about your safety, worried that you are doing something without thinking it through. Your head is fuelled by love,to a point you have plan A which is making the families like each other. Plan B is mostly effective.

Ungo: Effective?

Me:Hold everyone hostage,act like you killed one of the children well make up creates nice wounds.

She laughed.

Ungo:Did you drink wine?

Me:A bottle or two,I have no idea,I can hardly see my fingers. I think I lost my fingers.

Ungo:Mama though.

Me:I killed people for a leaving,led one of the best armies,trained Tia Petra, can't just be killed overnight. Take care of yourself.

Ungo:I love you.

Me:I love you too.

I dropped the call and looked at her.

Me:Well you were right, this one sounds like a threat and he went to my baby girl.

Her: What should I do?

Me: Kill him, if he has another bunch of mini him, kill them too.

Her: Accident?

Me: Make it look like a homicide just unsolvable.

Her: As you wish.

Me: Good.

She walked out.

✓ GENESIS 36

BLACK CATALINA

Me: What else?

Meri: Church?

Me: Blow it.

I dialled the number.

Me: A church full of Christians just went down AJ, time is ticking and you are not helping.

She laughed.

AJ: Put me on loud speaker. Merihim looking gorgeous as any demon on earth. Catalina if you don't stop before your soul is tied, you will never get the chance. Know what will happen? I'm going to find your son and burn him alive.

Me: Are you threatening me?

My phone beeped, I looked at the picture she just sent.

AJ: Your son.

I looked at Merihim.

Me: You said that he was safe.

AJ:From normal people,I am not. If you don't change your mind, forget seeing him from hereon.

Me: Leave my son alone.

AJ:Ohh I haven't touched him yet but soon I will. Tick tock.

The call ended.

Me: You lied to me!

Meri:I told you the truth, except AJ can find her.

Me:Our deal is off.

She chuckled.

Meri:Girl I own,I don't need you to be tied to me but you gave up free will.

Me:I don't care,I am not listening or doing anything for you.

I felt a pinch on my leg and back,I turned and two snakes laid on the floor looking dead. I moved back only to fall,I couldn't feel my back nor my legs.

Me:Wha-

My tongue twisted.

Meri:Very nice journey we had beautiful,now let the big boys take over and show you power. When we are done, we'll give you a chance to ride with us,if you still won't agree, I'll kill you.

She ripped my clothes off,I couldn't move a single muscle as I looked at her.

Meri:Go ahead.

I blinked in confusion,I felt something move on my leg. Two snake eyes stood staring right at me,I just opened my mouth as the snake moved to a man.

Meri: Welcome Beelzebub.

Beelzebub:Merihim you surprised me with the entrance. This one will do.

I felt something so painful on my lower body, taking my breath with it then continued as I struggled to breath. I could feel a little pieces of my life leave,I closed my eyes and it stopped. I opened them,there was no one. I screamed when I got up. I looked around in fear,there was no one just me naked. I looked at the nasty liquid on my thighs,it smelt so bad. I leaned on the wall and cried.

AMAHLE

Nathan: Amahle!

I looked at him.

Me:Dr Black.

Nathan:Where is Fleur?

Fleur:Why?

Me: Exactly.

Nathan:Can we talk?

Me:Nope.

Fleur: Exactly that, let's go.

Me: You are avoiding him in class.

Fleur: He has proven to be a nuisance already, girls and choosing the wrong ones.

Just as we walked out.

Voice:Fleur Zarkina!

We turned and slapped connected with Fleur,I didn't ask I just threw my backpack at the person. Fleur pulled me away.

Me:Who the ruck is thi-ohhh snap abort.

Mrs Autumn Black.

Fleur: Been waiting for you to show up after the texts.

Autumn: You are a disgrace to women-

Me:Says the one whose husband saw a hippo.

She looked taken back.

Me: Blame the woman while the person who decided to marry you gets away swiftly. Why are you embarrassing yourself honey? With that energy go beat your husband.

Fleur: He likes choking and spanking, should try to keep the bedroom alive. What else?

Me: Call him Daddy.

Fleur: We fucked, nothing big about that but girl don't come for me with that bull. He should have stayed with you and left me alone. You are embarrassing yourself.

Autumn: You are never going to be happy ever.

Fleur: Askies love if I hurt your feelings, nothing major could always come over for comfort.

Me: Move along or we continue with the fight?

She stormed to her car.

Fleur: She is going to bruise, your backpack has a laptop.

Me: Bruise back to her senses, I know.

Fleur: Psychopath.

Me: I know right.

We got in my car

Advertisement

Fleur suddenly went quiet.

Me: You good though.

Fleur:I am sure she's comparing herself, thinking about a whole bunch of things.

Me:I understand that but being guilty is part of your life. Even though,she should be mad at her husband, you take a man that wants to be taken. Shifting blame is the reason they are always going back to their cheating partners. I bet you a thousand they are going to fix things and pretend nothing ever happened.

Fleur:True,very true. Just like you are about to.

Me:Huh?

She pointed to the car parked outside our gate.

Fleur:Go for it girl.

I parked,he stepped out dressed in a suit. He sure looked like those dreamy men I read about.

Zane:Hi.

Me:Hey.

Zane: You good?

Me: I'm good.

He just hugged me,it felt good to be held.

Me:I am really good,thank you.

Zane:Look I know that I -

Me:Did the most nicest thing for me,I was angry that I couldn't do it myself. For years I have been bullied by him and Athandile. I wanted revenge but I wasn't ready to.

Zane:I am really sorry for what you went through.

It was actually nice of him not to let go.

Zane:I wanted you to know that I am sorry and I really like you.

I grinned staying in the hug.

Me:Same.

Zane: You are not going to move.

Me: It's better here.

Zane:Fine.

We just stood there,I knew that I was going to at least try to love a man with all of me this time.

XANDER

Me: That's impossible,these are the only surveillance cameras that have his face, he's like some ghost.

Genesis:Ghost?

Me:It shows him in your house and entering Ungo's workplace,outside all cameras stopped working before he arrived.

Mom:Some sort of glitch he created in all the systems.

Me:Says here that he studied computer science and worked in NASA,runs a microbiology lab in New York,has an intelligence agency which gives countries the best of countries. Heh?

Genesis: What?

Me:All these under one company. ZARKINA A CENTRAL ELECTRONIC company.

Mom:AJ?Why?She took the weapons and gave them to Hunter,the same ones.

Me:She basically merged all these companies to grow under her.

Mom:She was always prepared.

Genesis:Think she created a mini her?

Mom:The company has technology that none of us do along with its school,teaches almost anything to do with electronics. IT, anything that has to do with electronics is learnt from there.

It is the supplier to all countries, technology, science and technology, engineering, you name them.

Me: She's a genius when it comes to technology. Didn't they say that it is a multibillion company?

Genesis: Just how rich is this woman huh?

Mom: Countries paid millions for a simple meeting to discuss deals with her, she was that demon everyone wanted to get rid of but knew they needed.

Me: More reasons why you two should fight then she could help us. None of you can get a hacker this good.

Genesis: If he's like a ghost, people are going to die.

.....

Me: Hey Nathan.

Nathan: Xander. What are you doing here?

Me: Meeting someone in town. Good to see you.

I didn't want to be around him any longer, I just walked to a restaurant. It was like God was against me, Fleur and her friend sat in our of the tables.

Me: Ladies.

Amahle: I'm definitely having a hard time coping with looking at you, almost thought that you are Zane.

Me:Very unfortunate. Fleur.

Fleur:Mhm.

Me:Mind if I sit with you?

Amahle:Sure. I will be right back.

I looked at Fleur.

Me:Is there something I did to you?

Fleur:What do you want Xander?Come on,I am still trending for sleeping with your cousin brother. Are you trying to humiliate me even more?

Me: Really thought after what I saw I wanted nothing to do with you,now I see you here. It's not possible okay?

Fleur:I could care less,I don't like you for even one bit. Next time do not sit with us please,I am tired of men wanting me because they think they will get me. I don't want you.

Me:Go out with me, if you decide that you still feel like that I promise to stay away.

Fleur:Fine.

Me: I'll call you.

I got up and walked out grinning.

✓ GENESIS 37

LUTHER CASTLE

Me:And?

Guard:He just walked in.

Me:Give me the gun.

I loaded the gun and looked at the restaurant. I looked and I found him sitting on his own. I aimed, waited as the waiter talked to him before moving. I pulled the trigger, I watched as it shattered the entire window before shooting his head. He slumped over. I dialled Genesis.

Genesis:Castle.

Me:One week is over,track your little brother. I don't know which one. He's dead.

Genesis: You -

Me: I'm not done,I just started Genesis.

I dropped the call and packed the gun.

Me: Grab everything.

I walked back to my car.

Me: Take me to the cemetery.

I sat in silence. The Bilsons were going to understand that they cannot kill us all in the end. We reached the cemetery, I stepped out and walked to the graveyard.

Darlene: Hey big brother, thought you were no longer coming.

Me: Was tempted in staying away.

Cassie: Bitter Luther.

Me: Don't preach.

Darlene: AJ is here.

My heart jumped as I looked at where she was pointing. Indeed AJ stood there talking to my aunts and uncles. A young girl stood holding her hand.

Me: And that?

Cassie: For someone admiring AJ you surprise me, that is her daughter Fleur. Aren't you going to greet them?

I walked to them.

Me: Afternoon.

The girl turned first, it was like looking at a mixed version of AJ, the girl was beautiful. She did not smile, just showed her teeth. I was honestly surprised as I looked at her.

Me: Hi.

She just stared at me.

AJ:Luther hi.

Me:Mrs Zarkina,I didn't know that you were coming.

AJ: Your mother was part of your company in every way,coming here isn't forced. Anyway this is my daughter Fleur,baby this is one of my proteges Luther Castle.

Fleur:Nice to meet you.

I extended my hand but she didn't take it.

Fleur: I'll just go and get something to eat.

AJ:Heard that you are back in town.

Me: I've never left actually.

AJ:Who is following you?

Me:Well might have went in places that I shouldn't.

She looked at me.

AJ:If my family gets caught in the crossfire between you and the Bilsons,I know how to get yours. Don't involve them in this bullshit.

Me:If your niece decides to stand in my way of getting revenge I will not hesitate to blow her head. I respect you a lot but you don't scare me,now don't ever think about threatening me. I'll

kill whoever thinks they can, your sister should call her little assassin off or I will teach her a lesson. I'm untraceable for a reason, I won't let some old woman think she can. Very nice to meet, lovely daughter you have. Thanks for coming.

GENESIS

I looked at him, he sat on the chair his head slumped backwards.

Me: You can take him.

Melody: What should I do about this?

Me: Do what you usually do.

There was locomotion outside, I walked out and my father stood there.

Dad: Is he dead?

Me: Yes. Where is Mom?

Dad: In the car, refusing to come out. Have you asked Castle what exactly he wants?

Me: He made it clear what he wants ages ago, revenge.

Dad: My son is dead Genesis, there must be something that he wants from you.

Me: Justice for his father.

Dad:Do it then, I'd rather have a jailbird as a child than nothing.

Ungowam stood there watching,I know we were trying to be discreet but I walked to her feeling overwhelmed. I pulled her to a hug.

Ungo:I am so sorry.

Me:Me too

Advertisement

I should have known he would really go to the extent of going after my brothers.

Ungo: You wouldn't have known out of the blue though.

Me: He's like a shadow, can't pin where he's headed exactly.

Ungo:I am so sorry.

Me:I don't feel being alone tonight, can I come over?

Ungo: Anytime.

She kissed my cheek.

Me: Seriously?

She chuckled. I kissed her on the lips,flashes were almost blinding as she moved and walked back to her car. I walked to mine,I looked around and there was Luther in the crowd

looking right at me. I stood still, he waved and disappeared in the crowd before I could do anything.

DR ALITHA

Me: Hi, I am Dr Alitha Mhlontlo.

Dineo: Uhm can I help you?

Me: Are you Professor Dineo Mtatase?

Dineo: That's me.

Me: Uhm my mother suffered something similar to what you went through.

I looked at the salt, slowly kicked so I could walk in.

Dineo: What do you mean?

Me: Can I come in?

Dineo: How rude of me, come in.

I could feel the protections in the house but weren't that strong, I sat on the couch.

Me: My mother was shot by Tia Petra, kept alive there until she gave birth to me. I was raised by my aunt while my mother was kept as a prisoner to work free for Tia Petra.

Dineo:I am really sorry for what you went through. I never imagined what happened to me, happened to someone else.

Me:She returned her in a body bag.

She gasped.

Dineo:That child is one of the most despicable thing ever.

Me: Your daughter AJ apparently warned my mother before it happened, just can't believe no one didn't believe her.

Dineo:Oh God.

Me:Say that again. I am asking myself one question why are people not speaking against her huh?Why are you here and saying absolutely nothing about it?That woman took years of your life and you never spoke out. Some victims would want to follow if you talk.

Dineo: I never really thought about that.

Me: I just want someone to be on my side as I also tell my own story,if you talk they will follow suit. I mean they know that you were one of the victims just never told the truth.

Dineo: You have a silver tongue right there.

Me:It couldn't save my mother from Tia.

Dineo:Let me make some tea.

Me: I'll just get my phone in the car.

As I walked out,I moved more salt and got in my car.

Me:It wasn't so hard to convince Dineo to go against Tia Petra.
We control of her way of thinking,soon she'll be ours.

Beelzebub:Merihim you amaze me. I had no idea that you are
this good.

Me:Soon I will be talking to Ungowam,one by one I will be
having them as my good friends won't know what hit them.

As if on cue,a car pulled in. MJ walked out as I grabbed my
phone.

MJ:Ohh hi.

Me:Hello. I am not believing this, you are the First Lady.

MJ:Used to be.

Me: Doesn't matter. I can't believe that I have finally met
you,oh my goodness!

MJ: You must be?

Me:Dr Alitha Mhlontlo.

She looked at me confused.

Me:Might have known my mother,she was one of the doctors
that worked-

MJ:Black White project. My condolences,I never got to her funeral.

Me:There wasn't any,her body was badly composed to be put in a morgue. That's what happens when you are murdered by Tia Petra.

She cringed.

MJ: I am really sorry.

Me: Sorry? You are doing nothing when that woman turned you against your own blood?I am ashamed to even admire you, what have you done? Nothing. Tell your mother I will come another day.

MJ:I didn't - I walked to my car.

Me:Acting is overwhelming. Merihim we'll continue some other time.

I took the bracelet off and sighed. Without it I looked like I haven't slept in days. I dialled the number.

Me: Oh hey Ungowam Manona? I'm in Trenius and sure need some help.

Ungo: It's a date,tell me when and I'll be there.

Me:Yay, I will tell you.

I dropped the call and chuckled before starting my car.

✓ GENESIS 38

GENESIS

Ungo: Eat.

I put my hand between her thighs.

Me: You on a silver platter?

Zane: Right here brother.

Britney: Me too, geez.

Ungo: Let me go Genesis.

Me: I just want to-

Ungo: Don't start with me Genesis.

Me: Liefie.

She rolled her eyes, before gasping as AJ and Fleur walked in. I think my mother heard her voice and looked up from the chair, she looked at AJ surprised.

Mom: AJ.

AJ: I am really sorry for what happened.

Mom: Thank you for coming.

It was times like this that I have realised that my mother had no friends at all, she had Dad and her siblings, no one else.

AJ: I am just helping outside.

Fleur walked to us.

Fleur: Hello.

Nia: She graces us with her home wrecking self.

Ungowam tensed, Fleur chuckled coy as she looked at Autumn and Nathan.

Fleur: The dog barks.

Me: Nia please, this is my brother's funeral not some fighting ring.

Nia: This is not over little girl.

Fleur: Says an old woman to a child, pathetic if you tell me.

Ungo: Fleur-

Fleur: Shut up? Since when do you think I should keep quiet when she's clearly bothered by something that doesn't involve her? She's bringing up a fight and nothing about her cheating twin?

Nia: You -

Fleur: Zip it, let April talk for herself.

Autumn: Autumn!

Fleur: Slip of the tongue, oops.

Autumn was fuming because clearly Fleur was taunting her on purpose.

Me: Women do you have to make everything hard?

Fleur: Teach these heifers to deal with Nathan Black and leave me alone.

Nia & Autumn: Heifers? Who you are calling a heifer?

Everyone turned to us.

Ungo: You are causing a damn scene in a funeral!

Fleur: If they want a fight, tell them I am available.

Ungo: Will you just stop it? I'm tryi-Granny?

Her grandmother walked in.

Fleur: Granny.

Dineo just started laughing, pulled a chair and sat in front of my mother.

Dineo: Life isn't always what you ought to be. The sharp side of the knife just turned to you and went for your child. Do you understand what you have done? Karma is hitting you so hard but you are still so proud, you have destroyed families and

didn't bother checking up on them. Those are rejoicing seeing you like this, I am enjoying everything you are going through.

Tia: Very pathetic if you tell me, is this how you guilt trip people? Sending your mother to push me in feeling guilty? As if your daughter MJ didn't work for people that killed people for a living.

Dineo: Did they imprison me for years? Did they take years that I could have spent with my children? Did someone do that to you?! Clearly this is your time to shine and you are still pointing fingers at people.

Tia: Your so called Prophetess murdered People and not once felt guilty about it or people condemning you about it.

Fleur: Oh it is definitely your time to shine Tia Petra, my mother was nothing you were the favourite now you are expiring you are pointing fingers. Karma is playing her cards right.

Dineo: I am hoping that you feel every little pain of losing a child and die everyday until you die. The person should have shot you, but not that you die but be trapped on a wheelchair and watch people turn against you. That damn brain should have killed you the moment it had the chance.

My mother lowered on the chair.

Dineo: You are a monster and you are so proud to accept what you did all because you are busy pointing everyone's flaws like

yours are invisible. I missed so many years but you don't care, would never because you don't know how it feels.

Tia: What more do you want from me?

Dineo: To die like the dog you are.

Ungo: Grandmother please.

Dineo: Please? Were you there with me? Were you?

Ungo: It's not li-

Dineo: Then don't ever try that again. Is it because you are in love with her son? The same who has-

Me: I let you talk to my mother like that because everyone is emotional today but don't you dare talk about me in that manner.

Dineo: What? Going to kill me? I'd like to see you try, your mother is going to die one way or the other.

Me: Ohh please do try that old hag.

Ungo pinched me so hard, I swear my skin went red.

Me: If you have nothing else to say, I would like for you to leave. Guards escort this woman out.

Dineo: Ohh I am only starting boy, better have Ungowam on your side.

She walked out.

Fleur: Lol.

Ungowam walked out,I sighed as I followed. She was following her grandmother but she was too fast.

Me: Liefie!

Ungo:Did you have to talk to her like that?

Me:I wasn't going to let her-

Ungo: Genesis conversation between two people didn't need you!

Me:So I was going to watch-

Ungo:Do you know grief?Do you?

Me:Why are you angry?

Ungo:My grandmother is grieving years of not being with her kids while your mother had every day to be with you,she feels that your mother is feeling exactly what she felt when she kept her imprisoned. You could have zipped your mouth instead of Insulting my grandmother?

Me:If you think I am going to stand by and watch people walk all over of my mother then clearly you don't know me.

Ungo:Then clearly you don't want these families to have peace!

Me:Tha-

Ungo:Do you understand how this looks like?Me watching my grandmother being disrespected by the same guy suggesting peace. Your temper isn't going to help us.

I sighed.

Me:I couldn't -

Ungo: You can't respond with anger every chance you get Isaac,these people are holding grudges.

Me:I am so sorry.

Ungo:All I am asking you in times like these,do not respond with temper. Calm down before responding because it won't end well.

She just leaned on me.

Ungo:Back to zero,at least my aunt was outside.

Shouting echoed inside

Ungo:Fleur!

Me:Well this I got to see, Autumn and Nia fighting Fleur.

We walked back inside, could have known AJ's daughter wasn't one to lose. Autumn was nursing something as Fleur was on top of Nia beating her,no one was stopping them,Zane was going through his phone. Everyone just watched. Quinn grabbed her

from Nia, Fleur pushed him and swung a plate on him, luckily he ducked. Fleur fixed her clothes and walked out.

Ungo: Yooh weh!

FLEUR

Amahle: Are you crazy?

Me: She threw food at me, food! Then that April decides to help her so they can gang on me! The hell?

I threw the dress in the bin.

Leilani: I'm surprised that you came out of it fine.

Me: High five!

We did while laughing.

Kveta: You two are out of your damn minds.

Amahle: Tell me.

Me: Why gang up on me over a man who came to me?

Leilani: Exactly.

I finally got dressed.

Me: I'm done, can we get going?

Kveta: Yep.

As we walked out of the room,I realised that the back door was opened. My mother sat on the chair,with her head between her legs.

Me:Mamas?

She looked up.

Mom: Leaving?

Me:Yeah, we'll be back before you know it.

Mom:Oh okay. Bye.

Something was wrong

Advertisement

she was really down and couldn't even hide it at all. We got in Amahle's car and drove to town. We were just going to eat out nothing much. We finally got in the restaurant.

Leilani: I'm staying single,boys are off my playlists well kind of tired of playing them.

Kveta: I'm single as far as I am concerned.

Me:Stay like that. Mjolo!(Dating!)

Amahle: Can't agree with you though guys.

Me: Mhm Mrs Bilson.

Waiter: Excuse me,I was told to bring these to you, courtesy of Miss Fleur.

Me:From?

He pointed at the far corner,Luther Castle sat there with some men,he was looking right at me.

Me:We don't want them,if you return them we're leaving.

He walked away with the drinks.

Kveta: He's hot.

Me:In hell maybe.

We didn't look back but the drinks didn't come back,we ordered and sat down chatting. We finally got our orders.

Voice:Ladies.

We looked at him.

Luther:Date?

Me: Can we help you?

Luther: I am hoping to borrow a phone,have no airtime,if you don't mind. I need to call my driver.

Amahle: She's the only one who always with airtime.

I unlocked my phone.

Luther: Thanks beautiful.

Me:Fleur,my name is Fleur.

He chuckled and dialled the number,a phone rang on him.

Me: You are your own chauffeur?

Luther:Dementia, sometimes I forget that I am the one driving my own car. Used to be rich.

Me:Says the guy wearing a Rolex with diamonds.

He took it off and handed it to me.

Luther:Thanks I just wanted to be able to remember the exact time that I met you.

I gaped as they cooed.

Me:Sly,take your watch.

Luther:If you return it, means that you will allow yourself to be mine to keep.

He raised one eyebrow.

Me: Fucken hell seriously?

I have never been cornered.

Luther:I lost an hour of time. Can I borrow one of yours?

I chuckled.

Me:Take your watch.

Luther:Then you agree?

Me: I'll keep the damn watch.

Luther: You look beautiful as ever,crazy how I am liking you out of all people.

Me:Wrong person,I am not your type.

Luther:I am your type,soon you will see.

Leilani:I like him, he's pissing her off nicely and she is not even getting angry.

Me: I'm not pissed.

Luther:But right now you are going to have to explain to your dear mother how you got a Rolex.

Kveta:Oh snap!

Me:Fine,here,here take your damn watch. I'll go on the damn date with you.

Luther:Tonight, I'll send you the address.

Me:So fast?

Luther:Thinking of running from me already?It won't hurt going out you do know that right? You might moan my name that's the dangerous part, I'll send you the address.

He walked away without taking the watch.

Amahle: You are flustered.

Me: I am not!

I laughed, the guy was interesting with the way he had me wrapped in his little game without letting me come up with a trick at all.

Kveta: Go out and see where it takes you.

Leilani: His bed he said.

Me: No ways!.

They laughed.

BLACK CATALINA

He got off for the tenth time, I could smell the bad odour coming out of him. I struggled to sit up straight, he walked to the door and left. Merihim walked in.

Me: What do you want?

Meri: Do you want him to stop? It can.

Me: How?

Meri: Get AJ to heal you.

Me:She wouldn't dare.

Meri: She'll agree, trust me.

I looked at her,I just had to agree.

Meri: You try to escape, your son will die. Take her Beelzebub.

I jumped as he grabbed me,soon I was outside a house. I pressed the intercom.

Voice:Yeah.

Me:AJ please help me!

Silence. The gate opened,I tried to walk in but I couldn't. Something was blocking me.

Me:I can't walk in.

I was about to sit down when AJ emerged.

AJ:Why are you here?

Me:I need you to heal me,please.

AJ:If you were here because you want me to heal you, why are you outside?

Me: I can't walk in.

AJ:If your intentions aren't about you getting healed well obviously you won't be able to walk in.

Me:I have no choice.

AJ:But try to bring a demon and its kids in my yard?

Me:Huh?

AJ: You don't think, he's just having sex with you right? You are pregnant.

Me:Please help me.

AJ: When you do want help, you'll be able to walk in. Tell me which demon?

Me: Beelzebub, that's what she called him.

AJ:The sin of gluttony?Oh fucken hell you are not going to be free from him just like that, he's going to destroy you before he lets you go ever.

Me: What do I do?

AJ:If you still believe everything they say you are not going to be free Black Catalina.

Me: They are going to kill my child.

AJ:I have your son,they don't. Me: What?!

AJ:God will help you if you let him,til then there's nothing I can do for you. The gate closed.

Me: I'll even tell you everything. Merihim is Dr Alitha Mhlontlo!

✓ GENESIS 39

TIA PETRA

Zak:He was always quiet.

Me: Always acting serious.

Zak: We'll always remember him.

Me:Yeah.

Zak: What is bothering you?

Me:Life is so unpredictable yet none of us believe that. I did things and wasn't anywhere feeling sorry for the victims. Look at this mess,I don't know how to fix.

Zak:You know how to fix it Tia, you are just acting a little proud instead.

I sighed.

Me:Well clearly Dineo doesn't share her sentiments with me.

Zak:No one is going to agree with you. You need to apologize.

The guard walked in.

Guard: Your sister is here.

Me:Bring her in.

Soon Tiana walked in, me and her weren't really that close even though she married Will, Zak's twin.

Tiana: Hey.

She hugged me.

Me: Hi. What are you doing here? You were here on the funeral.

Tiana: Just checking on you, brought some snacks.

Zak: I should go to the gym. Bye love.

Me: Mhm.

Tiana: Look, we're sisters acting like we don't care for each other isn't going to help us.

Me: Ohh.

Tiana: You think I am lying don't you?

Me: I am listening not thinking, I am too damn tired to think about such.

Tiana: Didn't mean it like that.

Me: It's alright.

Tiana: I'll just make these so far.

Me: Thanks.

I dialled the number.

AJ:Yeah?

Me:I think it's time we talked.

AJ: I'm not available Tia.

Me: I need to talk to you Avuyile, avoiding me-

AJ: You can't expect to be free just because you want to talk to me,I have important matters like one of the sins being on earth hunting for me. Now when I have the time and chance I'll show up.

Me:Luther Castle killed my son and is planning to kill more people.

AJ:Well he's doing what we do best, killing people what is different now?

Me: He's nowhere to be find.

AJ:To you not me.

Me:I want to stop him before he kills more people.

AJ:Tia?

Me:Yes.

AJ:If you think that I will help you hunt Luther down count me out. Don't you realise that he's the result of your cruelty?I have come to realise that grudges don't just disappear, people work

on them looking for revenge in return. Maybe you think I am just going to forget about you.

Me:We are the definitely the same people.

AJ;Of course you and MJ are the same,me?No. I did not betray any friend many times and didn't feel guilty about it. I supported you like I was obsessed, first thing you did was not even wanting to say goodbye when you left. Understood that you might be hurting,I finally get a chance to go to London, you try to control me and work for you. Went so deep and took my unconscious mother and then. You made me sound like I was losing my damn mind, you and MJ.

Me:I-

AJ: Don't you ever cut me off while I am talking to you Tia Landra Petra!The asylum where you two had me drugged and beaten still remember that?So understand if I say that I don't want to talk, I'll talk when I am free. I called you my friend yet you went and did the worst to me. Now if you don't mind I would like to learn about the damn demon in peace,go talk to MJ,I am sure she'd love to hear from you.

The line died,I huffed brushing my forehead. It was going to be a lot harder than I thought.

LUTHER CASTLE

Me:And?

Sauy: I think they are keeping a low profile after the guy's funeral,well it is obvious that you are gunning for them.

Me:Mhm.

I grabbed my takkies.

Sauy:Are you going somewhere?

Me:Yes.

Sauy:As the head of your guards I don't know that.

Me: You will see when we get there.

Sauy:She must be something alright.

Me: She's AJ's daughter.

Sauy:Huh boss?

Me:I don't know,I think she's rubbing off me.

Sauy:How?

Me: I wanted to know her,I talk a lot around her.

Sauy:How many times have you been around her?

Me:Once,she has my Rolex.

Sauy: You gave her your Rolex? Should I hit you? What if she knows and she's spying then?

Me: Nothing is going to happen to her Saury, you are not going to have her followed. Are we clear?

Saury:Yes Boss.

I didn't know what was going on with me and defending Fleur Advertisement

it was possible that she knew who I am but still didn't want to think she'd really betray me,as if she owed me loyalty.



I was panicking that she might not show up. She walked in the restaurant wearing a short dress and heels,her hair tied to a pony.

Me: Almost thought you weren't coming.

Fleur:Tempted not to but then I had a deal.

Me:Or you just like me.

Fleur:I don't like men ever.

I chuckled as I pulled the chair letting her sit.

Fleur:Thanks.

Me: You are beautiful.

Fleur:Thank you.

Me: So tell me about yourself, the menu is right there.

Fleur: Aren't you curious?

Me: Always, just wanting to know if I will get a chance to pop those buttons.

Her face flushed.

Fleur: Okay, where is the waiter?

Me: Sex on the beach?

Her eyes widened.

Me: You do know that is a drink? Blowjob too.

She coughed furiously.

Me: Unless you don't mind stripping for me every once in a while.

Fleur: Are you crazy or something?

I shook my head, I was really acting weird. Talking so much it was getting weird.

Me: Crazy for you right?

Fleur: Oh God! Waiter!

I chuckled as the waiter walked to us, she ordered and I did.

Me: I'm Luther Castle.

She took her phone and searched.

Fleur: Clearly you are not into social media.

Me: I'm not on social media.

Fleur:Fleur Zarkina.

Me:Bloom.

Fleur: Definitely not a fairy.

Me: You are their Queen that is for sure, you are Bloom well my Bloom.

Fleur:Each chance you get you are complementing me.

Me: You are beautiful,I have to. In hopes that you become my girlfriend soon.

Fleur: I'm leaving tomorrow morning, have to go back to school,was here for Xander's funeral.

Me:Ohh you knew him?.

Fleur:Not really, just partially knew him.

Me:Where are you studying?

Fleur: You can always come and find out.

I grinned as I watched her act like she did not just say that. I really had to talk to my doctor, something was off with me. I

avoided taking women anywhere but here I was anyway, entertaining Fleur Zarkina.

UNGOWAM

Me: It's tiring I am telling Ngimphiwe, why everyone is still this bitter?

Phiwe: Just because you weren't there or understand what they feel doesn't give you the right to judge them or ask what you are asking.

Me: I want these families to be together, I want to be with Genesis in peace Phiwe.

Phiwe: Well clearly not everyone agrees with you.

Me: What do I do?

Phiwe: Find the ground level, ask them what exactly do they want from each other in order to forgive.

Me: I will try.

Phiwe: You really love this guy don't you?

Me: I do, I do.

Phiwe: Poor you. You are going to be fine. Where are you?

Me: In his house, he went out to get some food.

A knock echoed.

Me:Bye, someone's at the door.

Phiwe:Bye.

I dropped the call and walked to the door. I opened.

Felicity:I wa-

She turned to look at me.

Me:Hi.

Felicity:Is Isaac here?

Me:No.

Felicity:I was just here to check if he forgot the clothes.

Me:Ohh I thought the delivery guy was going to pick them up.

I walked to the table and grabbed the plastic.

Me:Here.

Felicity: He's letting you stay in his house.

Me: Anything else baby momma?

Felicity:We have a child together, we'll eventually get together.

Me:I know.

She walked back,I chuckled. If she thought I was that stupid to believe her then she clearly didn't know me. I walked back to the couch and sat down, going through my laptop.

Me:Luther Castle why are you not showing anywhere at all?

The door opened and Genesis walked in.

Genesis: What are you doing?

Me: Checking Luther Castle,only his parents and sisters are here.

Genesis:We don't have to find him, he'll come to me and I will just ask him what he wants.

Me:Then what huh?

Genesis:Give him what he wants.

Me: You guys getting arrested is an option?Are you serious?Kill him.

Genesis: Killing causes problems.

Me:How long do we have to Wait till he kills someone else?

✓ GENESIS 40

DR ALITHA MHLONTLO

Me:Hi Ungowam.

Ungo:Ohh hey how are you doing?

Me: I'm good.

I looked at the earrings she was wearing,I could feel Merihim struggling to contact me.

Me: You?

Ungo:Good. So where can I take you?

Me: Funny I have survived just wanted to hang out if you don't mind.

Ungo:No,no that is fine. I need the time out.

Me:All I meet is patients allover the world and they are as stressful as kids.

Ungo: It must be stressing.

Me: What is going on with you?

Ungo:My life is a movie.

Me: Boyfriend problems?

Ungo:More like family problems, they don't really like each other.

Me: It's a good thing that you have a family, people like Tia Petra destroyed that before I could fathom.

She gulped.

Me:I get it.

Ungo: People make mistakes.

Me:Like murdering people?We can't change that a life is gone and we're left to watch a murderer live freely. That's another level of torture I had to endure.

Ungo: I'm really sorry.

Me: It's cool, let's not ruin the mood. Nice earrings you have there.

Ungo:Was a gift from my aunt.

Me:It looks like diamonds,can I rob you?

She chuckled.

Ungo: You will have to do a lot better than that.

Me:Well if you say it like that.

The hair on my back stood so fast,I turned and someone walked in. Had no idea who but it was someone powerful.

Ungo:Are you alright?

Me: Someone just walked in.

She looked at the door confused,a woman walked in and her head almost snapped as she looked at me.

Me:Do you know her?

Ungo:Recognise her?

Me:I feel like I do,so is the fear covering me.

She grinned as she walked to us.

Woman:Ladies.

I moved back.

Ungo:Hi.

Woman:Can I sit here?

I looked at her,she sat down anyway.

Ungo:Aunty,I didn't know that you were home.

Me:Aunty?

I could feel more presences surrounding her,well the guards perhaps.

Ungo:Alitha this is one of my many aunts,Niyabona. She comes home once in a blue moon.

Niya: Interesting pendant you have Alitha, recognise it from one of my many adventures.

Me: Belonged to my mother.

Niya: It didn't, I'll talk to AJ.

Ungo: About?

Niya: Simple seeing you in town that's all Ungo. I should get going.

I felt so cold, something about her was creepy. I watched as she left.

Ungo: She likes scaring people, don't worry.

I had to know who was she.

AMAHLE

Me: Coming geez!

I opened the door, a woman stood there looking at me.

Me: Hi?

Woman: Alicia.

Me: Uhm huh?

Alicia: The girl who supposedly impregnated herself.

Me: Okay?

Alicia: Look I had intentions by doing so but clearly they are against me, I don't want to abort because I regret it.

Me: Why are you telling me this?

Alicia: I'll be giving the child up but Zane isn't wanting to listen to anything I have to say. Look I did what I did but it's not worth what I will be doing to the child.

Me: Why?

Alicia: It's not everyday you get a man you believe will be a great father to the child.

Me: Are you sure about adoption?

Alicia: I have no other option actually so I am just trying.

Me: Before you do anything

Advertisement

can I try to find the right parents for the baby?

Alicia: It's a boy.

Me: He must be so handsome. Uhm take my number, when you are ready tell me what will happen after. I have few people who wouldn't mind having him.

I don't know what I was doing but I was sure that it was not going to end well for me if Zane were to find out.

Alicia:Thank you.

I smiled and she walked out.

Fleur:Disaster.

Me: I'd rather know where he's going because clearly Zane isn't nowhere near interested.

Fleur:For valid reasons.

Me:I understand that,I am a woman, it's natural to want to protect the child.

Fleur:How?

Me:My mother but that would be a little out of place,I need a place to blend him in.

Fleur:How long do you plan on doing that?

Me:As long as he doesn't want the child.

Fleur:In lies Amahle? You want to start a relationship in lies already?Now when he finds out that you helped that woman.

Me:Might lose him,so be it.

Fleur:My mother could take the child,look at me.

Me:Do you think so?

Fleur: When it backfires do remember today.

Me: Can I borrow your phone to call her?

Fleur: Here.

I dialled the number.

AJ: Amahle.

As always I gasped, it was weird how the woman seemed to know everything so easily.

Me: Mrs Zarkina.

AJ: I wouldn't mind.

Me: I-I don't know -

AJ: Don't tell the mother it is me, I'll happily take in the baby.

Me: Thank you.

AJ: He'll grow and then you will have to tell him the truth.

Me: Thank you.

I dropped the call and looked at Fleur.

Me: Honestly this is happening so fast and I am here helping.
Oh God be with me.

AJ

Me:My love.

Cesar:I am broke.

Me: There's a child that is being given up for adoption.

Cesar: You want us to adopt a baby?

Me: Until his father chooses to accept him and let go of the anger he's bottling towards the way he was conceived.

Cesar:Sounds complicated.

Me:Yeah.

Cesar: It's fine,after all our kids are old.

Me:Old you say.

A knock echoed.

Me:Come in Niya.

She walked in.

Me: What brings you in my house?

Niya:Demons,very powerful demons are on earth and really getting close with your family.

Me:Ohh?

Niya: Beelzebub and Merihim,who did you piss?

Me:Lilith,their damn mother.

Niya:It surprises me that you have not done anything yet.

Me:I am not like you always going around looking for fights when you could have stayed in your kingdom.

Niya: You still don't like any of the Janges.

Me:I don't like anyone Niyabona especially with that last name.

Niya: Merihim is possessing a vengeful doctor and your family isn't seeing that.

Me:So you came here to tell me what I already know?

Niya: You are standing by watching these demons hurt innocent people?

Me: Unlike you,I wait for my orders,I don't do what is not asked of me and lastly going to find demons could result in few things. My death and innocent lives taken,now I have to be very patient here.

Niya:Or you could kill those demons as usual.

Me:The way you are already assuming that you know me is strange,I have no interest in listening to you.

Niya:Even when Ungo is being lured by Merihim? You think she'll think the same?

Me: Nia why are you here?

Niya: Your father is dying, something your siblings refuses to share with you.

Me: Dying?

Niya:Stage 4 pancreatic cancer.

Me:That explains his disappearance.

Niya:The doctor said he has less than 2 months to live,well exactly 13 days.

Me:My condolences.

Niya:He wants to talk to you.

Me:To ask for forgiveness,tell him I will be in his funeral! Get out!

Niya: I'll see you.

Me: Hopefully never again

✓ GENESIS 41

MJ

Me: What are you doing?

Mom: We're doing what you failed to do.

Me: Hypocrisy if you tell me, your daughters are the same as Tia Petra and you are fighting her. What about us?

Mom:We-

I heard the front door open.

Me:Uhm do you have a visitor?

Mom: In your house?

I pulled my gun and walked to the front door,I saw a man looking at the pictures. Guns clicked pointing at me.

Luther:Mrs Minothando Yonela Jange-Manona.

Me:Luther Castle what brings you to my house?

My mother showed up.

Me:Mom go back to the kitchen.

Luther:Bring the assassin.

I looked at Raven looking beaten up.

Me:Let her go.

He pulled the gun and shot her on the head,I flinched as I stood there.

Luther:Told AJ to tell you to get your assassin.

Me: You are starting -

Luther: Unprovoked you cane for me Mrs Manona.

Me: You threatened my child.

Luther:Did I?I merely asked and you sent a killer after me. I will give you one chance,if you send another killer I will cross a line and kill your children. Do not try me.

They walked out,I just stood there looking at the body on the floor.

Mom: What is going o-a dead body! Someone is lying on the floor!

Me: I'll deal with it.

.....

Me:Hi.

AJ was holding a pacifier.

Me:Whose baby is that?

AJ:Mine duhh. What brings you here?

Me: Look I just realised that life is very short, way too short. We have made terrible mistakes but we're busy pointing at someone else, saying they have made too many more than me.

AJ: Is it because my father is dying? I have forgiven everyone for everything they have done to me. I do not want a relationship, I honestly don't want one. I just want peace, why are you trying to force a relationship?

Me: I'm here to apologize for everything I have done to you. I can't begin to explain what I did at the expense of your happiness. I did that and here we are paying for everything.

AJ: I have done things, I have apologized to those people but I am not forcing them to have a relationship with me. They know that I apologized, I forgave everyone for everything they have done but I don't want you in my life. We're sisters, that happened I accepted an apology that never came but it doesn't mean we should be close again. No, it's alright but my forgiveness shouldn't be the reason you are coming back to my life.

Me: Our children are building relationships with people whom we despise.

AJ: Each chance I am trying to do something for anyone, I am always reminded why would I? Tia did this to you, I am being forced to remember that trauma I went past, you are here to

apologize and I accept it. That it doesn't mean that we have to be so close.

I sighed.

AJ: We look bitter because we are always busy remind each other, our kids grew up listening to everything we did to each other, that built unnecessary hate between. Unfortunately that is uncontrollable, forgive yourself because I have already did. I am not holding grudge Because I refuse to be close. I forgive you all but don't think I want a relationship because I don't. God gave each and every one of us a chance to do right for those we hurt, we broke them instead. Yes you can apologize million times but it doesn't mean that the relationship should be there. I don't want a relationship with you or Tia or my father all because I am protecting my peace, I don't hate any of them.

Me: I didn't know.

AJ: Because when I say that I don't like something you said, everyone is quick to put the past on the table so I would rather protect my peace. I will be there for you whenever you need me, don't force things, we are suppose to help our kids do better by teaching them that the past is a lesson. Genesis is a lesson, a past in revelation. Stop trying to apologize and forgive yourself, Ungowam loves Genesis, your hate for yourself is ruining things. Look at me, my child is falling for the least

expected guy and all I will do is protect her heart's interest because I can. What matters now is that our kids want peace and we should give them that.

I wiped my eyes.

Me:Thank you.

AJ:Thank you for coming,makes the forgiveness worth it. Learn to accept the past.

Me: I will have to talk to Tia.

AJ:Me too, she thinks that I am changing my mind about beating her up. In fact I am going there as soon as possible, surprise her with my fists.

Me: What are you talking about?

AJ: Want some tea?Kveta can you please make some tea?

Kveta:Coming.

I shook my head.

GENESIS

Me:Hey.

Ungo:Suggesting to kill someone was just wrong,I shouldn't have even thought of that. It was so unlike me and definitely wrong.

Me:Anger definitely makes people think such things.

I pulled her to a hug.

Me: Don't think much about it.

Ungo: You smell good.

Me:I know.

Ungo:Oh geez.

Me: Liefie.

Ungo:Say it again.

Me:Eeh girl!

Ungo:Geez.

I pushed her against the wall.

Ungo: What are you doing?

Me:Been long since I have been inside here.

I touched her coochie,she gasped.

Ungo:Nope,I am not interested.

Me: Really?

I trailed my fingers off her arms

she moved but I blocked her.

Me:Can I have a kiss?

Ungo:Ah Genesis.

Me:Be slower and lower your voice and say that again.

She looked at me confused,I grinned.

Ungo:Ah Genesis. Fuck you!

I laughed as she realised what I made her do.

Me:Moan my name love,go ahead liefie.

Ungo: You are so dirty minded do you know that?

Me: You make me like that. Are we sure that we don't think I should lay between your legs,or my mouth between your legs?

She coughed furiously.

Me: There's a juice down here,I could just take few bites here and here until I get here.

I took small bites from her her neck, unbuttoned the shirt and unclipped the bra. Pushed the tracksuit down as I took small on her stomach.

Me: Should I?

She just nodded, slowly moved her panties down and picked her up. I put her on the couch, put her legs on my shoulders before licking her inner thighs. She clasped them but I pushed them apart, I slid my tongue all over her coochie. She grabbed my hand pulling it up for some weird reason. I slowly licked her before thrusting my tongue inside, she almost ripped my arms as I continued sucking. She was becoming wetter and wetter, I could feel my dick threatening to tear my zip. I went up to her neck then her mouth before taking off my shirt, her fingers on my hair. A knock echoed so loud, at first we just ignored it. Another echoed with shouting.

Ungo: That sounds like emergency.

I groaned.

Me: I'll be back.

I opened the door, Zane stood there looking like he's seen a ghost.

Me: What?!

Zane: I don't know what to tell you.

Me: Who is dead?

Zane: No one is dead.

Me: Zane you just disturbed me for what exactly?

Zane:Look I don't know what is going on but you have to find Felicity and Allison.

I looked at him confused.

Me:Why?

Zane:The guards just called me that she hasn't been out of her house for three days.

Me: She's somewhere.

Zane:I went there myself,the car was there except it was a mess. The house looked like a war zone,blood and them gone. Phone on the floor and I tried to track her cards,no use and they are nowhere to be found.

My heart stopped.

Me:Luther wouldn't.

Zane:We thought he was not going to kill anyone and he shot Xander.

Me:Why would he do that?

Zane:We have to find them.

Me:We can't even track the damn guy!My daughter Zane, she's only two months old. Two only!

Zane:Calm down.

Ungo:Is everything alright?

Me: Allison and her mother are missing.

Ungo:Oh God!Do you think Luther has them?

Me:Or they are already dead as we speak.

Zane:I am sure there will be something.

I rubbed my forehead.

FLEUR

Me:So that's why some people are allergic to some medicines,so it is very wise for a pharmacist to be aware of any patient's allergies before prescribing any medicine. Thank you.

Everyone clapped,well I was indeed the last person to present in my class as usual.

Nathan:Thank you Miss Zarkina.

I went to my chair to grab my things.

Amahle: You just nailed everything.

A woman walked in and talked to Nathan.

Nathan:Miss Zarkina you have a delivery.

Me:Coming!

We walked to the woman who looked well too dressed to be delivering, she smiled before walking. We could see people gathered in the field, we followed the woman.

Me: Where are you going?

Woman: Your delivery.

Amahle: Oh my God!

Me: Holy smoke!

Bouquets were put on the field representing my name, it was not hard to read as you could see on the TV.

Woman: This way.

I was shocked, surprised and mostly wanted to scream out loud. Someone literally bought flowers to write my name in my school, I just walked as people screamed. Cameras were clicking as I just stood amazed. My phone vibrated.

Me: Yeah?

Luther: Well you are surprised.

Me: How-

Luther: On your far left.

I looked until my eyes landed on him standing by the gate.

Luther:At least I saw you smile,white roses are nothing compared to your beauty.

Me:Thank you.

Luther:I wonder how you are going to explain this. Bye.

He dropped the call and disappeared. I just stood there amazed, it was something that I never really expected ever.



Amahle: Nothing!

I ended up giving all the girls the flowers including my best friend,now we were trying to find him on social media but nothing came up at all.

Me:Why is he a mystery?

Amahle:Weird how your smile was so broad.

Me:Someone just gave me flowers well entire flower shop out of the blue, that is the most nicest thing a man besides my father ever done for me. Romantic if you ask me.

Amahle:Oh my God! What happened to Fleur?!

Me: I'll beat you.

We laughed.

Amahle:I pray he loves you more than you do.

Me: Too fast, love? I like him, nothing else.

Amahle: Why not ask Ungo to search him?

Me: I'll ask her.

My phone vibrated, I grinned.

Amahle: You just like him huh?

Me: Fuck off.

I picked up the phone.

Me: I gave the flowers away.

He chuckled.

Luther: Expected, so many bouquets. Have you eaten?

Me: We are still thinking about cooking but we're still lazy.

Luther: Pizza?

Me: We're broke.

Luther: It's outside.

Me: Huh?

Luther: Look outside you have a delivery.

I walked to the window and he was standing outside.

Me: Stalker!

Luther: Guilty as charged.

I grabbed my gown.

Me:I should get you arrested.

Luther: You can always try.

I dropped the call and opened the gate.

Me:Hi.

Luther:Hi. I got this before I leave Varlia.

I took the box and plastic.

Luther:Have a good night.

He kissed my cheek before walking to his car,I stood there stunned as he started the car. I walked back inside.

Amahle:Oh my!

I was bombarded by questions instead, what the hell was going on with me?Fleur fucken Zarkina!

✓ GENESIS 42

BRITNEY

Me: I'm here.

Keanu came back to South Africa and invited me to dinner. I fixed my dress before walking out, he looked as good as I remembered him.

Me: Hey.

Keanu: Looking beautiful Brit.

Me: Thank you.

He opened the door for me, I walked in and sat down.

Keanu: So you are meeting the family.

Me: What?!

Keanu: There's an event well charity event here, my parents are one of the major sponsors so I thought why not bring one of the best designers?

Me: Warning perhaps?

Keanu: You would have said no.

Me: Still!

Keanu:I am sorry.

Me: We're not dating,so I thought This was a date not surprise the in-laws.

Keanu: You want to marry me?

Me:Oh God forget I said anything,I was joking.

He laughed before taking my hand,I looked at him as he drove. It was rather nice to catch but I didn't want a long distance relationship.

Keanu: I've bought a house here in Trenius,soon I will be staying here just few weeks.

Me: What do you mean?

Keanu: Britain kingdom does not really need me like Trenius does.

Me:Did the country need you that much?

Keanu:Well need my sister actually.

Me: You are moving here?

For me?I wanted to ask.

Keanu: There's a girl that is why.

Me:Ohh.

I looked at him confused as a guard walked to the car,he stepped out and they talked. He came to my side.

Keanu: We're here.

Me:This is the most expensive gala on earth.

Keanu: Apparently.

He took my hand and we walked to the door,the cameras were flashing and we walked. The guards bowed which was weird,I was rather nervous. Some people looked at us as we walked past.

Me:I should have said no.

Keanu: I would have stayed with you then.

He led me to a table where I could clearly see my name.

Me: You knew that lying would bring me here.

Keanu: Obviously. Do you want juice?

He opened the chair for me.

Me:Juice.

Keanu: I'll be back.

I looked around at the expensive garments and jewellery worn by celebrities I've seen on TV only. A girl sat besides me.

Her:Hello.

Me:Hi.

For a second I swear I thought she looked like Keanu.

Her:Mariana Lungako.

Me: Britney.

Mariana: You are the pretty Britney my brother can't stop talking about?

Voice:This is her?

A guy sat down,my heart went out of my chest as I looked at the blonde haired Keanu.

Mariana: It's not easy seeing mirror images. Jeremiah sit down, you are scaring her.

Me: You two look like -

Them: Same as Keanu?Did he tell you about us?

Me:Not really,we didn't talk about families that much a-

I swear I fainted and came back to life as the crown Princess of Britain sat across me.

Mariana: You look like you are going to die.

Me: She's -

She looked up.

Me:Princess Honora.

Honora: Yes.

Jeremiah:Keanu's girl.

Keanu looked like he wanted to run as he walked to the table.

Honora: Little brother.

Me:Brother?

It was definitely getting hot.

Keanu:Here.

Me: You didn't tell me that you are one of the British Royal triplet.

Keanu:Does that change anything?

Me:It changes everything!

Keanu:Does my status make you question my intentions?I didn't tell you because most girls that I like always run,few stay for the cameras so I thought it was better not to tell you.

I had nothing else to say.

Me: You do understand what my mother did to your country right?

Keanu: What are you talking about?

Me:Tia Petra?

I swear they all turned to look at us,my heart stopped. He sighed.

Keanu: You said it yourself, your mother not you.
Mother,Father.

I swear I was going to get on my feet and bow as I looked at Queen Candy, looking as flawless as always. She sat down so did her husband.

Candy: It's nice to meet you Britney.

Me:I-uhm-I,mhmmh,is-mhm.

They looked at me.

Me: Queen Candy is-uhm .

I coughed. She chuckled.

Candy:Calm down. What is your name?

Me: Britney Dellisantro.

Candy: Tia Petra 's only daughter.

Keanu: What happened to no stalking?

Candy:Ohh come on, she just mentioned that her surname is Dellisantro as far as I know she's Tiara Petra's daughter unless I am lying.

Me:No you are not.

Candy:See?

I was waiting for her to mention what my mother did.

Candy: Don't be uncomfortable thinking about what we'll do knowing Tia Petra,as long as you do not follow her steps we're fine.

Dante: I won't hesitate chopping your head if you try.

I gulped.

Candy: Honey don't speak like that to your daughter in-law,the reason your dear son is moving to this country.

I looked at Keanu

Advertisement

his siblings were laughing.

Candy:Oops secret exposed,I am definitely not sorry.

I chuckled.

Candy: You are moving here for her though.

Keanu:Mom please.

Candy:No sex before marriage.

They looked at her.

Candy:I can explain the thing about Honora.

They just laughed,I calmed as Keanu took my hand. Just hopefully.

AMAHLE

Zane:We looked everywhere for them,we can't find them nor that guy.

Me:Do you think something bad happened?

Zane:I don't know what to think actually,it could be something bad or they are fine. I don't know.

It was frustrating to be honest, sitting here with a guy overthinking.

Me:Zane can I ask you a question?

He looked at me confused.

Me:Why don't you give the baby a chance?

Zane:Baby?

Me: Your baby. What if the mother gives it up for adoption? Won't that make it hard for you to find him?

Zane: Amahle I don't want children,I play it safe because I don't want a child and someone pops condoms so she could get

pregnant. So I am suppose to force myself love a child I don't want?

Me: He's innocent.

Zane: So I should just love him because he's here? I don't even feel anything.

Me: But-

Zane: She made a decision alone, can't expect me to accept it ever. No!

Me: It's a baby.

Zane: So I am suppose to understand, you can, I won't. Can we stop talking about this?

I sighed.

Me: I was just saying.

He sat down and pulled my hands.

Zane: I don't want the child, forcing myself could lead me to mistreat the child. It's better this way.

His phone rang.

Zane: Genesis? Mhm, have you called Castle?

I looked at him.

Zane: He must know something. Okay I will be coming. Sure.

Me: Did he find anything?

Zane: Nothing.

Me: What about this Castle guy?

Zane: He's the guy that shot Xander and plans on killing my family.

Me: What is his name?

Zane: Luther Castle.

I swear I died.

Me: Ohh sounds nice.

He looked at me confused.

Me: The name, the name is quite famous.

Zane: Are you alright?

Me: Just worried about little Allison.

I was beginning to question everything, what if he was off the internet because he was killing people. I was worried about Fleur, what if he wanted to kill her?

Zane: Amahle!

I jumped my forehead connecting with his.

Me: Sorry just worried.

I wanted to call Fleur but refrained from doing so.

DR ALITHA MHLONTLO

Me: The power was hard to ignore.

She shook the bottle before pouring the water in the bowl.

Meri: You don't have to worry about her.

Me: What is she?

Meri: None of your damn business. Now how far are you with the manipulation?

Me: Ungo isn't easy because all these people are protected, she has earrings and pretty strong though. It's like AJ is watching from the shadows.

Meri: She's prepared, you will need to add extra weight by turning the families against each other.

Me: That will be tricky considering that Ungowam is dating Genesis.

Meri: Huh? Interesting combination if you tell me.

Me: Can't we break them up?

Meri: Yet you couldn't even touch him.

Me: Well what?

Meri:We just need to do the biggest thing to break them apart.

Voice:Ohh hello Dr.

Merihim disappeared along with her things.

Me: Come in.

Voice:No need to run Merihim.

I jumped,AJ walked in and sat down on the chair.

Me:Mrs AJ.

AJ:Can explain that as fake fear but I do petrify you.

Me:How can I help you?

AJ: Mistake one is thinking I don't see anything,thing is you feel my presence almost around every family because I am watching.

Me:What do you mean?

AJ:They have cameras.

Me:Why are you telling me?

AJ: You plan on ripping them off, you try you'll see my wrath.

Me: You think you are untouch-

AJ:Touch me babes.

I gulped.

AJ: I don't think, I know. I was here to kill you but Merihim can't stand my presence so she'll run. Wait this means she ain't as powerful as she presented herself to you, how pathetic.

Me: Please leave my-wha-

She grabbed my hand and pinned me on the wall, I screamed as it felt like I was being burnt.

AJ: You are going to die like a dog if you don't stop.

Me: I won't stop.

AJ: Watch your back.

She walked back and out of the office, my wrist looked burnt.

✓ GENESIS 43

GENESIS

Me: We searched everywhere Mom.

Mom: I have contacted her family, they don't know anything.

A knock echoed and the door was open, MJ walked in followed by AJ.

Me: Uhm hi?

Mom: What brings you here?

AJ: Our fight.

At first I thought she was maybe joking, she walked to my mother.

AJ: Get up.

Zane chuckled, Mom got up looking confused. AJ threw a fist almost knocking my mother off her feet. My mother now realised that she was not joking, she made a stance and attacked. AJ dodged, walking around the house, going all over the place and refusing for my mother to get a chance to hit her.

Mom: Why do you keep running around?

AJ: You should know why don't you think?

I closed my eyes as AJ made a move, I believed in my mother but I knew AJ was going to beat her up. I opened them again and my mother was getting up from the floor. I stepped out and called Ungo.

Me: They are fighting.

Ungo: I wish I could see that.

Me: Zane is taking a video.

Ungo: Why not ask her about Felicity? She is good at knowing almost everything.

I walked back, I had to admit AJ was fast. She threw my mother across the room, my mother had bruises covering her face and every part of her body. I leaned on the wall and watched, AJ grabbed my mother up.

AJ: This is nice.

She kicked her and she went on her knees, it was rather gruesome as they fought non stop. AJ was indeed heartless. How did she come to a fight and came out with not even one single scratch at all? Dad kept laughing.

Zane: So clearly my mother had people do things for her.

Me: Obviously.

My mother laid on the floor bleeding as AJ hovered over her.

AJ: If I wanted, I could have killed you.

Then she sat besides her and the unexpected happened.

AJ: You hurt me more than anyone, you were my best friend and you hurt me Tia.

I felt bad, I mean I had to she was crying.

AJ: I showed up for you in so many occasions yet you threw everything right back at my face and didn't give a damn.

Mom: I am so sorry.

They hugged each other, I smiled.

Mom: Damn my body hurts, you really wanted to kill me.

Me: Sorry?

AJ: Mhm.

Me: Felicity -

AJ: Is just being petty, hoping to emotionally blackmail you to staying in your house. She kidnapped herself, just continue with life.

Me: What?!

AJ: She'll be back if you just pretend nothing happened.

Me: I'm going to kill her!

TIA PETRA

Me: Ouch.

AJ: Don't be dramatic.

Me:Ouch!

MJ:Guys we've done a lot of horrible things to each other and it should start with us. We should present a united front for our kids who are falling in love with each other.

AJ:My kids aren't falling for anyone actually well your kids, just opposite.

Me:Opposite?

AJ: Until she's ready,I won't be telling you or anyone anything.

MJ: Ungowam is in love with Genesis.

Me: That's obvious.

AJ:We have to talk to all of the families, we have to be honest. They have to accept that what happened stays in the past,we have to move on as soon as possible. For example giving back what we took from all the families, they may not forgive us but what is rightful theirs should go back to them.

MJ: True like what belongs to Luther Castle, give back everything that belongs to him, no need to ask just give it back. It won't change the lives that have been lost but give everything back.

Me: That is true.

AJ: Now-

Me: Ouuuuch! Fuck do you have to do that? Why did you have to have to volunteer to clean my wounds you stupid woman?

She smacked me.

Me: Argh!

AJ: That is nothing serious girl.

MJ: Okay guys!

Me: She started it.

AJ: I'm simply cleaning her damn wounds.

Me: You inflicted them.

AJ: I was disciplining you that is why.

Me: Trying to kill me.

MJ: Ahhh shut up!

AJ: I'm not your child, you shut up.

Me: Tell her.

MJ:Okay let's not forgive each other,I can't do this anymore.

AJ: Whatever.

Me:Hater.

MJ:Oh God!

FLEUR

Me:Hey, what is wrong?

Amahle:Have you heard from Ungowam?

Me: About?

Amahle: Didn't you ask her to look for Luther?

Me:I sent her a text,I guess she's too busy.

Amahle:Are you in love with Luther?

Me:I don't know.

Amahle:Why is he so secretive?

Me: Just because we're all like social media,it does not mean all of us do.

Amahle:Or he could be a deranged killer.

Me:Then that would be unfortunate.

Amahle:I am being serious.

Me:Seeing is believing.

Amahle: You could be dying.

Me: What is up with you?

Amahle:I just need you to be careful.

Me: Well obviously I will be. I am going on a date tonight.

.....

I stepped in the restaurant ,he was sitting alone on his phone. I walked to the table.

Me:One would swear someone stood you up.

He looked up grinning.

Luther:I think I got rejected actually.

He got up and pulled the chair.

Me:Thank you. Who rejected you?

Luther:This Fleur girl doesn't want to be my girlfriend.

Me:Maybe this Fleur girl knows better than trust you,I mean you are a mystery and she hates mysteries. I have been trying to figure you out for sometime.

He squinted his eyes.

Luther: What have you done so far to search for me?

Me:I have a cousin who is a journalist, she's going to search about you.

I swear his face changed a bit but covered it fast.

Luther: She won't have any tangible information just dead parents.

Me:I am sorry.

Luther: Journalists have a lot to say including lies.

Me:One thing about Ungo, she'd rather tell the truth. After all you are not telling me anything,heck I don't even know where you live, where you studied yet you know that about me.

Luther:I live anywhere I want to be actually.

Me:Not an answer. Makes me curious as to why you are avoiding my questions,maybe Amahle is right about you.

He chuckled.

Luther:I bet her little boyfriend told her about me and she thinks she knows me.

Me: Should I even continue -

Luther:Name one thing that I have done that made you scared or believe that I am dangerous.

I had nothing.

Luther:If the person shows you the good side, accept it unless they show you another side til then.

Me:Fine! Just because you are preaching

Advertisement

it doesn't mean that I will stop asking.

He laughed.

Luther: You are something do you know that?

Me:I do know that.

Luther:Shots ✓ GENESIS 43

GENESIS

Me:We searched everywhere Mom.

Mom:I have contacted her family, they don't know anything.

A knock echoed and the door was open,MJ walked in followed by AJ.

Me:Uhm hi?

Mom: What brings you here?

AJ:Our fight.

At first I thought she was maybe joking, she walked to my mother.

AJ: Get up.

Zane chuckled, Mom got up looking confused. AJ threw a fist almost knocking my mother off her feet. My mother now realised that she was not joking, she made a stance and attacked. AJ dodged, walking around the house, going all over the place and refusing for my mother to get a chance to hit her.

Mom: Why do you keep running around?

AJ: You should know why don't you think?

I closed my eyes as AJ made a move, I believed in my mother but I knew AJ was going to beat her up. I opened them again and my mother was getting up from the floor. I stepped out and called Ungo.

Me: They are fighting.

Ungo: I wish I could see that.

Me: Zane is taking a video.

Ungo: Why not ask her about Felicity? She is good at knowing almost everything.

I walked back,I had to admit AJ was fast. She threw my mother across the room,my mother had bruises covering her face and every part of her body. I leaned on the wall and watched,AJ grabbed my mother up.

AJ:This is nice.

She kicked her and she went on her knees,it was rather gruesome as they fought non stop. AJ was indeed heartless. How did she come to a fight and came out with not even one single scratch at all?Dad kept laughing.

Zane:So clearly my mother had people do things for her.

Me: Obviously.

My mother laid on the floor bleeding as AJ hovered over her.

AJ:If I wanted,I could have killed you.

Then she sat besides her and the unexpected happened.

AJ: You hurt me more than anyone, you were my best friend and you hurt me Tia.

I felt bad,I mean I had to she was crying.

AJ:I showed up for you in so many occasions yet you threw everything right back at my face and didn't give a damn.

Mom:I am so sorry.

They hugged each other,I smiled.

Mom:Damn my body hurts, you really wanted to kill me.

Me: Sorry?

AJ:Mhm.

Me: Felicity -

AJ:Is just being petty, hoping to emotionally blackmail you to staying in your house. She kidnapped herself, just continue with life.

Me: What?!

AJ: She'll be back if you just pretend nothing happened.

Me: I'm going to kill her!

TIA PETRA

Me: Ouch.

AJ: Don't be dramatic.

Me:Ouch!

MJ:Guys we've done a lot of horrible things to each other and it should start with us. We should present a united front for our kids who are falling in love with each other.

AJ:My kids aren't falling for anyone actually well your kids, just opposite.

Me:Opposite?

AJ: Until she's ready,I won't be telling you or anyone anything.

MJ: Ungowam is in love with Genesis.

Me: That's obvious.

AJ:We have to talk to all of the families, we have to be honest. They have to accept that what happened stays in the past,we have to move on as soon as possible. For example giving back what we took from all the families, they may not forgive us but what is rightful theirs should go back to them.

MJ:True like what belongs to Luther Castle,give back everything that belongs to him,no need to ask just give it back. It won't change the lives that have been lost but give everything back.

Me:That is true.

AJ:Now-

Me:Ouuuuch!Fuck do you have to do that?Why did you have to have to volunteer to clean my wounds you stupid woman?

She smacked me.

Me:Argh!

AJ: That is nothing serious girl.

MJ:Okay guys!

Me: She started it.

AJ: I'm simply cleaning her damn wounds.

Me: You inflicted them.

AJ: I was disciplining you that is why.

Me: Trying to kill me.

MJ: Ahhh shut up!

AJ: I'm not your child, you shut up.

Me: Tell her.

MJ: Okay let's not forgive each other, I can't do this anymore.

AJ: Whatever.

Me: Hater.

MJ: Oh God!

FLEUR

Me: Hey, what is wrong?

Amahle: Have you heard from Ungowam?

Me: About?

Amahle: Didn't you ask her to look for Luther?

Me:I sent her a text,I guess she's too busy.

Amahle:Are you in love with Luther?

Me:I don't know.

Amahle:Why is he so secretive?

Me: Just because we're all like social media,it does not mean all of us do.

Amahle:Or he could be a deranged killer.

Me:Then that would be unfortunate.

Amahle:I am being serious.

Me:Seeing is believing.

Amahle: You could be dying.

Me: What is up with you?

Amahle:I just need you to be careful.

Me: Well obviously I will be. I am going on a date tonight.

.....

I stepped in the restaurant ,he was sitting alone on his phone. I walked to the table.

Me:One would swear someone stood you up.

He looked up grinning.

Luther:I think I got rejected actually.

He got up and pulled the chair.

Me:Thank you. Who rejected you?

Luther:This Fleur girl doesn't want to be my girlfriend.

Me:Maybe this Fleur girl knows better than trust you,I mean you are a mystery and she hates mysteries. I have been trying to figure you out for sometime.

He squinted his eyes.

Luther: What have you done so far to search for me?

Me:I have a cousin who is a journalist, she's going to search about you.

I swear his face changed a bit but covered it fast.

Luther: She won't have any tangible information just dead parents.

Me:I am sorry.

Luther: Journalists have a lot to say including lies.

Me:One thing about Ungo, she'd rather tell the truth. After all you are not telling me anything,heck I don't even know where you live, where you studied yet you know that about me.

Luther:I live anywhere I want to be actually.

Me:Not an answer. Makes me curious as to why you are avoiding my questions,maybe Amahle is right about you.

He chuckled.

Luther:I bet her little boyfriend told her about me and she thinks she knows me.

Me: Should I even continue -

Luther:Name one thing that I have done that made you scared or believe that I am dangerous.

I had nothing.

Luther:If the person shows you the good side, accept it unless they show you another side til then.

Me:Fine! Just because you are preaching,it doesn't mean that I will stop asking.

He laughed.

Luther: You are something do you know that?

Me:I do know that.

Luther:Shots fired.

I laughed.

Luther: You are beautiful.

I smiled.

Me:Colgate optic white helps.

Luther: Seriously?

We just laughed.fired.

I laughed.

Luther: You are beautiful.

I smiled.

Me:Colgate optic white helps.

Luther: Seriously?

We just laughed.

✓ GENESIS 44

UNGOWAM

A knock echoed.

Me: I'm coming!

I opened the door and Alitha stood there looking like she was beaten.

Me: What happened to you?

Alitha: Long story, had a run in with a mental unstable patient and he almost killed me.

Me: Let me clean you.

I moved back letting her come inside, she looked at the floor but stood there unmoving.

Me: Aren't you coming in?

Alitha: I think I should really just go back.

Me: Wait -

It's like she was being blocked from walking inside the house. She turned, I picked my phone and called Aunt AJ.

Me: I think I befriended a demon possessed woman.

AJ:Dr Alitha?

Me:How-well she was here and struggled to walk in. She was in my grandmother's house,why haven't you protected grandmother?

AJ: It's a long story but she's fine.

Me:She convinced her to fight-

AJ:No,I told my mother to act along.

Me:Wait you knew that she was going to show up in the funeral and say all those things?

AJ:Not what she was going to say though.

Me:Aunty you deliberately -

AJ:Hey,hey don't preach to me. You stupidly befriended a possessed woman,who is reminding you?No one,now stay friends with her until I tell you to stop.

Me: You can't just -

AJ: I am helping you and your boyfriend with getting the families together, you will do what I want and immediately. Lastly if Fleur asks you about Castle, you zip your mouth.

Me: He's a danger.

AJ:Like your boyfriend yet I don't hear anyone repeating that. Now do what I ask and happy ever after is yours.

Me:Do I have a choice?

AJ:No,I didn't give you any.

The line went dead,the fear was replaced with annoyance,my aunt had that ability of annoying everyone every chance she got. My phone rang.

Me:Ro.

Fleur:Hi,I want to know about Luther Castle.

I grabbed my laptop.

Me:I don't know anything about him, just his parents. His father died in a car accident and his mother committed suicide not so long ago.

Fleur:Does he have siblings?

Me:Two sisters.

Fleur:How come I didn't get that when I searched?

Me: It's a newspaper article that is why.

Fleur:But you haven't told me anything about him.

Me:He went off radar after his father died.

Fleur:Ohh if you find anything tell me.

Me: Why are you asking?

Fleur: I've met the guy, way many times and I love knowing everything about people.

Me: Many times?

Fleur: Yes.

Me: Be careful.

Fleur: Thanks.

The line went dead, I called Genesis.

Me: Aunt AJ literally told me that I shouldn't tell Fleur anything if she asks about Luther, my little cousin calls and say she has seen him way many times.

Genesis: She has seen him many times? Where?

Me: What if he's stalking her and everyone?

Genesis: I will have someone check Fleur out.

Me: Her guards will know if you do, just don't.

LUTHER CASTLE

I sat in front of the therapist.

Therapist: You have not answered my question Mr Castle.

Me: What was your question?

Therapist:Why do you think the girl is too much?

Me:I am not guilty about the things I have done,yet whenever I think about her I just want to start over and do the right thing. I am asking myself why would I do that.

Therapist:Why?

Me:A woman running from the Bilsons came to our house,my parents believed all along she was there to spy. Trusting a woman is like trusting a venomous snake not to try and bite you.

Therapist:Yet you keep going to her,why is that?

Me:One single text from her

Advertisement

I am already planning to ask her out. It is unlike me, I use women for sex not relationship.

Therapist: You must be in love.

I looked at her.

Me:In love?Me?

Therapist:Why are you needing her approval more than anything?I asked you not to take revenge but you did,she shows up you are suddenly planning to be better.

Me:I don't know.

Therapist:Think it through, we'll see each other on Monday.

I sighed.

Me:Thanks.

I got up and walked out. My phone vibrated. "So want to go bungee jumping with me?Of course, here's the address." She was not really asking me,I chuckled and replied by calling her.

Me: Shouldn't you be in school?

Fleur: Exams you mean,just finished studying so I need a break.

Me:I live in Trenius, can't really show up now.

Fleur: Eventually you will, won't you?

Me: Manipulative if you tell me.

Fleur:Learnt it from my mother .

Me:Oh wow.

Fleur:See you soon.

She dropped the call.

Me: Demanding.

Guard:Boss.

I looked at him.

Guard:The Bilsons left messages.

Me: About?

Guard:It was two days ago asking for you to return Felicity and her child,well Genesis's daughter.

Me: What are you talking about?

Guards: According to here, they think you kidnapped her.

Me:Wait,wait so they are trying to frame me like they did to my father?

Guard:I believe that is the case.

Me:Find this Felicity and his daughter,bring them alive,so now we can actually talk about something that I have done. Bloody Bilsons. Actually kill her.

LEILANI ZARKINA

Me: I'm telling you the truth.

Letho:Lani how long do you plan on staying single?

I laughed.

Me:I should probably go back to dating in five years time.

Letho:What?!

I laughed.

Me:I am not interested in dating anyone,men are psychopaths.

Letho:Says you.

We sat on the bench talking,final exams were stressing everyone but we didn't miss any chance to go out and distress.

Me:Dating is very wrong.

Voice: Sorry?

We turned to look at the person,I gaped at the guy,he wore shorts and a vest.

Me:Hi.

Guy:I think Trenius is a little confusing,I am struggling to go to places. Can I ask you where is Union building?

Letho: Just down the road,the first turn to your left take it and the building is clear to see.

I watched him.

Guy: I am Quinn.

Letho:Letho.

I stared at him.

Quinn:And you?

I blinked.

Me:Me?

Quinn: Your name?

Me:Lani. Leilani I mean.

Quinn: Beautiful name, what does it mean?

Me:Ask Google.

Letho smacked me.

Me:I didn't have to respond you dung!

Quinn: I'll definitely do that.

I watched him.

Quinn:Do you have to stare?

Me:We gave you directions, you can leave. You dare smack me
Letho I'll show you hell.

He gasped before walking away.

Letho: You were checking him out.

Me: It's not everyday you meet hot,hot,hot very hot men. He's
so hot.

Letho:This girl.

Me:I wouldn't mind trying him though.

GENESIS 45

GENESIS

I typed on my laptop.

P.A: Your next appointment Mr Bilson.

Me:Let them in.

Luther walked in I reached for my drawer.

Luther:Who are you going to shoot?

Me: You?

Luther:I just realised that you want to paint my name with a bad brush, don't even care but since when do I kill babies?

Me:That was a misunderstanding.

He put the newspaper on the table.

Luther:With my face on it Genesis! You would go this far to make me the bad guy,now I am asking. Why don't I just kill them?

Me: Don't you dare!

Luther: Killing your brother wasn't lesson enough now was it huh? You decide to make a news article with my face on it!

Your days are numbered Genesis,prepare two coffins, your daughter and her mother.

Me: We're returning everything that is yours Castle.

He chuckled.

Luther:I have everything I want what will your things do for me?Remind me that you killed my father? Genesis I am not stopping anytime soon, only funerals will make me stop.

Me:What do you want?!

He looked at me and chuckled.

Luther:Been thinking about something,I need someone to deliver few things to DRC and you would do. Millionaire businessman wouldn't attract wrong attention.

Me: What is that?

Luther:Few blood diamonds.

Me:Why don't you ask your men to do it?

Luther: They have nothing to lose,some are too scared to leave this country. On top where you will be delivering,there won't be security well they don't let you come in with security.

Me:If I do that what?

Luther: You deliver the blood diamonds and return with my money,we can negotiate a price.

Me:I know that you are hoping that the DRC soldiers kill ke.

Luther: Like I said,man like you wouldn't attract the wrong attention. You do that,I consider a deal with you. You will go tomorrow.

He walked out,I called Zane.

Me:Well Castle found out about the newspaper.

Zane: Shit.

Me:He asked me to deliver some blood diamonds then return with the money,then we can talk about a deal.

Zane: Sounds easy.

Me:DRC.

Zane:Eeh! You are not thinking about going to a place where your guards aren't welcomed?

Me:If I don't he's going to kill Allison and Felicity.

Zane: He's going to kill them anyway if you don't come back alive, everyone knows how that country operates Genesis and they won't just let you leave the country with the money. The moment you land they will know. He's basically asking you to go and die.

Me: I'll find a way to get back alive.

Zane: Abraham's son Isaac only survived because God was testing Abraham, Luther isn't testing he's getting you killed.

Me: He's gunning for me and I should do something about it.

Zane: Don't do it Isaac.

DR ALITHA

Merihim: AJ knows.

A knock echoed.

Me: Aren't you going to run? You keep saying that you are not scared yet you ran the chance you got.

Merihim: That is none of your business.

Me: Ohh darling you and I are tied by a blood deal, if I don't want you to come back, I could just burn the damn bracelet. Everything you do is my business. Come in.

Ungowam walked in.

Ungo: I was worried sick about you.

Me: I am fine.

Ungo: Well you didn't even come in.

Me: I just realised that I was inconveniencing you for absolute no reason so I left.

Ungo: Don't ever think like that

Advertisement

it's not true. I am glad to help.

Merihim:I can feel the earrings, powerful.

Me:Please sit down.

Merihim:Let me try get closer.

My temperature went up, Merihim screamed and the window fell on the floor. Ungo jumped.

Ungo:Are you alright?

Me: Merihim what's going on?

Merihim: I'm being banished,the earrings, someone is using the earrings.

Me:Take your earrings off!

Ungo:Ohh hell no!

Me:Now! They are hurting me?

My noise was bleeding as I tried to keep up breathing.

Me: Take them off!

Merihim screamed even more and everything with glass fell on the floor.

Me: Merihim stop!

She was pulling her hair out, I swear I could see figures surrounding us as I sat on the floor bleeding. I tried to jump on Ungowam but something sent me back flying, I could hear words but couldn't hear them clearly. I looked up and I swear I saw AJ then she was gone. This pain happened for nearly an hour until it stopped, blood covered my eyes, I wiped them only to see darkness. I wiped them again but nothing came out.

Me: Ungowam?

I heard footsteps.

Ungo: You are one evil woman.

Me: I can't see!

I heard footsteps and suddenly a rope was wrapped around my neck.

Me: What are you doing?!

Ungo: Rest easy.

I struggled as she pulled the rope, I couldn't breathe do instead she pulled it until it was tight.

Me: I cannot see, I-I promise to do better please let me go.

I coughed as she pulled tighter, my vision blurred and there was no more fight left in me so I gave up struggling.

LUTHER CASTLE

Me:Hello old friend.

Rodric:Castle, hopefully you are bringing the diamonds.

Me: There's someone who is bringing the diamonds to you.

Rodric:Since when do you send other people to do your job.

Me:Well it is Isaac Bilson.

Rodric: Genesis? He agreed?

Me:He has no choice but to go.

Rodric: I assume there's a reason you are telling me this.

Me: You don't let him leave this country, you get more than you will be paying for. He's a millionaire and dry his bank account if you have to.

Rodric: Well you are talking about money,I am listening.

Me:I thought so too.

.....

Camilla: What is it?

Me:Can you please talk to someone for me?

Camilla:Someone?

Me:Fleur Zarkina.

Camilla: About?

Me: You are my sister, I don't know.

Camilla:Let me guess she doesn't even know who you are.

Me: Doesn't believe everything I say,I guess I have been hiding for a very long time.

Camilla: You like her?

Me:I love her.

Camilla: Can't be loving someone and killing people, she's going to find out and when she does,it will be over like nothing happened.

Me:I plan on talking to her.

Camilla:That you killed Xander Bilson and plan on killing Isaac Bilson? You are going through the most I am telling you.

✓ GENESIS 46 SEASON FINALE

FLEUR

Amahle: Bungee jumping? I am coming with you.

Me: Amahle what is up with you?

Amahle: Look with the mess happening out here, I am worried about what will happen.

Me: What mess?

Amahle: What if people are planning revenge on your mother?

Me: Fine. You are not one to be worried, you are lying to me.

She grabbed her things and we went to the car. Luther was waiting outside.

Luther: Ladies.

Me: She's coming with, after all I don't trust you.

Luther: Well bungee jumping has been closed, I was hoping that we go and watch some movies.

Amahle: The weather is perfectly fine for bungee jumping.

Luther: What if I cut the rope? Aren't you worried about that?

Me: Movies are fine.

Amahle:I am still coming.

Luther: Is there something I did Miss Selana?Or your boyfriend fed you with so much that you think he's telling the truth?Why don't you ask him again where is the baby and its mother?Please call him.

Me: What are you two talking about?

Luther: According to Zane Bilson,I kidnapped Genesis's baby mama and daughter.

Me: You know them?

Luther:Call him.

I looked at Amahle,she took her phone and called Zane. I felt like there was something off about the two.

Amahle:Did you find Felicity?

Zane:She kidnapped herself for attention.

Amahle: Newspaper article about Luther Castle?

Zane: We're still trying to fix that.

She dropped the call.

Me:So Amahle you chose not to tell me and act weird?

Amahle: That's not all.

Me: Your boyfriend just agreed in lying.

Amahle:He killed Xander.

Me:So?

Amahle: He's looking for revenge on the Bilsons.

Me:So you are team Bilson now?And you,what else do you want from me? Information about my family? You are using me aren't you?

Luther:Yet you are here asking yourself which info did you give away but then you realise there's none. I didn't involve you in anything I did.

Amahle: He's admitting.

Luther: You are two faced do you know that? Your boyfriend killed your uncle and the man sent to kill you,yet you are labelling him as the good guy.

Me: Heh?

Luther:Did he tell you how he and his brother killed my father and took everything we had?Did he?

Amahle jumped.

Luther:If you think you know me then you are about to see a whole lot worse than you can imagine. Zane shows you love and suddenly they are angels, clearly you think you know them.

Funny I was falling for your friend,now I think I should back off.
Nice to meet you.

He walked back to his car and left.

Me: Speak fast.

Amahle:I didn't know how to tell you.

Me:Oh really?But you knew how to tell him right?So now did
Zane ask you to lie to me and confront him?

Amahle: It's not like that.

Me:My friend decides to lie to my face for what?So she could
confront the man? When you told me what Zane did,I don't
remember doing anything to him because you confronted him.
You couldn't tell me one simple thing when I asked you!

Amahle:I am really sorry.

Me:What else are you doing for this boyfriend of yours?
Spying? You let me like Luther while you knew what you knew,I
literally fell for him and you kept quiet. When Zane wasn't
around,you didn't hide anything from me but here we are.

Amahle:I wa-

Me:Screw you Amahle,screw you all.

AJ

Me:Well that went south fast.

Michael:I do have one problem.

Me:She killed her and burnt the house.

Michael:Just left you few months alone and the whole world is on fire AJ.

Me: You left me to figure out everything on my own and I did exactly that.

Michael:Lilith broke out of hell,we had to return,all angels on earth had to return to restrain her.

Me:I should be grateful right?

Michael:Very. Beelzebub will be arrested,well has been arrested already.

Me: I am grateful.

He touched the child.

Michael: What is his name?

Me: Antonio.

Michael: You are doing more than good AJ, I was surprised when you effortlessly took him in without complaining.

I looked at him.

Michael: You are growing up.

My phone rang.

Me:Aurora.

Fleur: I think I may have fallen in love with someone.

My saliva went to the wrong pipe,I coughed so bad. Angels?

Michael literally wanted to laugh.

Me: With?

Fleur:Luther Castle

Advertisement

I don't know what to think but he might be on a rampage well killing spree.

Me: What are you talking about?

Fleur:The guy has it in for the Bilsons.

Me:What do you have to do with the Bilsons?

Fleur:Mom he's killing people, you do understand that he wants Genesis dead.

Me:I don't understand anything you are saying,why is your judgement based on what they say?Why would you say you are in love and continue bringing someone's comments?

Fleur:Mom!So you think I should ignore everything?

Me: Have you asked him or you just blew?

She sighed.

Me:I killed my cousins,I killed hundreds of people Fleur,I don't remember your father listening to everyone,he sat me down and asked. Did he turn and left?Some people need you to love them so they can see what is worth,Luther is going through a phase of bitterness and you should be asking yourself. Do you love him ? Or you just want him? He's hot going to be an angel Because you want him to be. Ungowam is still dating Genesis despite everything he's done,now why are you listening to them?

Fleur:I didn't think it through.

Me:Do you still love him?

I shivered,since when did I get this old? My first born is in love!

Fleur:I think I do.

Me:Talk to him.

Fleur:I don't know where he lives.

Me:Think,he must have said something. Bye now.

I dropped the call.

Michael: You know where he lives.

Me:I do.

Michael:Why are you not telling her?

Me:She will figure it out,I taught her how to track cars so it shouldn't be so hard.

Michael: Clearly you are making things hard for her for no reason at all.

Me:Baptize the child Michael and leave,I got earth.

He touched Antonio and gasped.

Michael: What did you do?

Me: Nothing.

Michael:Did you do the skin to skin?

Me: He's still a baby.

Michael: He's the next healer.

Me:I know, that is why I took him in the first place.

Michael: And isn't a Bilson.

Me:I know that.

Michael:AJ and secrets.

Me: Baptize him and leave archangel.

UNGOWAM

Genesis:What?!

Me:I killed someone and burnt her along with the house.

I pointed on the news.

Genesis:That doctor?Why?

Me:She was going to kill me.

Genesis:Come here.

I held on him tight,I was definitely spooked. My phone rang,I jumped.

Me:I have been waiting for this. Mamncane?

AJ:If you let your boyfriend leave this country,he might die and I can't protect him from any darkness that will come. People of Congo aren't friendly to anyone.

Me:Ohh?

AJ:Have a nice day.

Me:Are you going somewhere?

Genesis:I have made a deal with Castle,I deliver something -

Me:To Congo?Are you out of your mind or you want to die?

Genesis:If I do this Allison returns alive.

Me:Or dead. Why would you trust someone who killed your brother with your life?

Genesis: Should I gamble with their lives and live to regret it?

Me:Aunt AJ just said if I let you go, you might die. Should I?

Genesis:I am going to Congo Ungo,I am not about to gamble with my daughter's life.

Me:Do what you want to do Genesis, when it backfires just remember that I tried.

Genesis: Don't say that.

Me: Leave.

✓ GENESIS 47 SEASON FINALE

AMAHLE

Me:I am really sorry.

Fleur:I get it.

Me:I should have told you the truth.

Fleur: We shouldn't be letting men come between us either.

Me:True.

Fleur:I really like him you know?

Me:I should have not been biased, he's been treating you well that is what matters.

Fleur:I am really sorry,uhm I should tell you something.

Me: That doesn't sound good.

Fleur:The baby Alicia brought isn't hers.

Me:Huh?

Fleur: He's five months old and has been babysitting her,so she decided to take a chance with Zane. My mother found out,now Alicia wanted to get money because the baby's mom hasn't come for sometime. So the only way for Zane not find out was if she had him adopted.

Me:She lied?

Fleur:My mother knows who the child belongs to.

Me:I have to tell him.

Fleur:He knows that it's not his.

Me:I didn't know that.

Fleur: You did a good thing for the child.

Me: Because I thought it was his,all along it is not.

Fleur: Alicia saw an opportunity and it didn't work, wasn't willing to admit that.

Me:I am really sorry for what I did,I could have told you instead.

Fleur:No need to dwell on that,he refuses to speak to me anyway, tried tracking him and bounces. He doesn't want to be found or plans on being found by me at all.

Me: Didn't you say that you think he owned the restaurant you went to?

Fleur:I could go there and ask for the owner.

Me:Yes.

Fleur: What if I get kicked out?As far as I know he'd rather die than be around me.

Me: I'll take you there and we'll figure something out later.

GENESIS

I sat in the taxi headed to where I was going to drop the diamonds, the taxi stopped and I walked out. I grabbed the bag before walking to the front door of the hotel and walked to the reception. I put the card on the table, the man looked at it then me.

Man: 13th floor, Room 86.

I nodded and walked to the elevator as he called whoever. I finally reached the floor and knocked on the door. The door was opened and someone let me inside.

Man: Ricardo.

Me: Genesis.

Ricardo: Please sit down.

I sat down as he handed the diamonds to someone else.

Ricardo: They will be weighed.

Me: Why not weigh them in front of me?

They weighed them speaking in a language I couldn't understand.

Me: Is it done?

Ricardo: According to the information, you are to return home dead not alive.

I looked at him.

Me:That is not the deal.

A knock echoed. A guard walked to the door only to come crashing down,all the guards raised their guns at the door. AJ walked in dressed in a suit.

AJ:I hit him too hard,I know.

Ricardo:Miss AJ what are you doing here?We stopped dealing with you!

AJ: You are shaking, don't let me scare you. Handover the diamonds and the money.

Ricardo:I will no-

The bullet missed him by an inch, went past his face to the wall.

AJ: Imagine if I just move, I'll split your head in halves.

They packed the diamonds and the money and pushed the bag to her.

Ricardo: You are -

AJ: I'll kill you. Let's go Genesis,get the bags.

I took them and followed her.

Me:Luther-

AJ: You are one stupid child! Risk your life for people that can die before you even make it back home, you can have another child but no you are so damn stupid.

Me: So just let them di-

AJ:She wanted that

Advertisement

didn't she?If she can do that don't you think she's capable of killing of the baby?

Me: You think she'd -

AJ: Genesis you have gone way too emotional, you are thinking with emotions instead of your damn head. I left a baby downstairs.

I looked at her surprised, when we reached the last floor,she walked to the kitchen and came back with a baby.

Me: You have a baby?I had no idea.

AJ:Was I suppose to tell you? Look I need you to return everything that belongs to Luther, I'll get his sisters.

Me: You know where they are.

AJ:I always know everything. Let's go.

FLEUR

I stepped in the restaurant and walked to the counter.

Me:Hi,I lost my bag the last time I was here. Called but no one responded.

Cashier:I am sorry Miss. What kind?

Me:I gave you plenty of chances to find my bag,get the owner. Your manager is definitely doing a horrible job when it comes to training you.

She looked taken off guard.

Me:My name is Fleur Zarkina,in case you want to search me. I'll be waiting.

I walked to the chair and sat down. I sat there,I heard him before he could walk in and I got up. He was shouting,then he looked at me and paused. He walked to me.

Luther:I should have known that it's you creating a scene.

Me: You were not picking up my calls,I know how to get attention.

Luther:Now you have it what do you want?

Me: I need to talk to you.

Luther: We don't have to talk about anything Fleur. Can you please leave?

Me: I'm not leaving until you listen to me. I have every right not to trust you Luther, I asked you all the time and you refused to tell me the truth about you. When someone says something about you, I'll believe them more than you because I don't know you. Now I have come really like you.

It was so Uncomfortable because he looked so bored and uninterested.

Me: Do you have to act so bored? Smile or something.

He blinked and laughed.

Luther: You are crazy.

Me: I like you a lot, I don't know about love, I am always choosing the wrong man. I don't know what I should do but I should have at least asked you to tell me the truth. I am leaving.

Luther: Please sit.

I sat down.

Luther: I killed Xander Bilson, I planned on killing Genesis and Zane too.

Me: What do you mean planned?

Luther:Sent Genesis to DRC,I thought of you for a moment called your mother and told her what I have done. I can't do what I planned on doing because I met you,I think I am in love with you.

I just sat there stuck, looking at him.

Luther: I am not expecting you to love me back or whatsoever,I am -

Me:Want to go out with me?

Luther:Huh?

Me:Can we go out and figure the rest later?

Luther:Fine.

Me: Just don't kill anyone.

Luther:If they don't piss me off, they are fine.

✓ GENESIS 48 SEASON FINALE

BRITNEY

Keanu: Hi.

Me:Hey. What are you doing here?

He moved and Honora stood there looking at my dresses.

Me:Uhm?

Keanu:Told her that you are a designer,she is here to check your dresses before she leaves for Britain.

Me:Mhm.

Honora:I like these a lot so I want them.

Me:Huh?

Honora:I have a whole bunch of events to attend and these would do.

Me:Thank you.

Honora:I like suits too,if you can do them please let me know.

I nodded as I quickly packed everything and sent it to the cashier.

Honora:Thank you.

I couldn't really speak. She walked away as I stood there.

Keanu: You are so excited.

Me: All of my dresses do you understand?

Keanu: I have to support you in some way even if it includes bringing my siblings to buy your clothes.

Me: Thank you.

Keanu: I'm your boyfriend after all.

Me: Huh?

Keanu: You don't know? Now you do, we're dating honey. I have to go, I love you.

He kissed me on the lips and walked.

Keanu: I said I love you!

Everyone looked at us, I wanted to strangle him.

Me: I love you too!

He grinned before leaving, my phone rang.

Me: I am going to kill you.

Dad: Why?

Me: Daddy, hey.

Dad: So aggressive, you wanted to kill me.

Me:I thought you were someone else.

Dad: How are you doing?

Me: Good and you?

Dad: Good. When are you coming home?

Me:I was home last week Dad,I can't be coming home everyday.

Dad:I miss you.

Me:Layla misses me, Elaine,Bailey and Rema do too. You don't hear them saying that I have to be home every weekend.

Dad:Oh wow, you don't miss us.

Me:I do but I am not coming home every weekend,Dad I have to work.

Dad:Britney don't you dare drop this call.

I did,I knew he'd think about blackmailing me to come. My father thought I had to come home every weekend.

LEILANI ZARKINA

Mom:Well is there anything else?

Me:I believe that I did well in my History exam.

Mom:I know that you always do well. I sent you some money for snacks.

Me:Thank you Mamas. When are you coming home?

Mom: I'm on my way as we speak.

Me:I am just going to get snacks before Dad comes to pick me up.

Mom:I love you.

Me:I love you too Mamas.

Mom:Do you mind if I send you a grocery list? You can take Kveta with.

Me: I can do that.

Mom:I owe you big time baby.

Me: You are sending me to do groceries Mamas not to buy the whole store.

She chuckled.

Mom:I should.

Me: I'll tell Dad before you even try.

Mom:He can't do anything to me.

Me:Bye Mamas.

Mom:See you soon.

I dropped the call.

Letho:You and your mother are just a dream.

Me:Drama, let's go and get some food.

We walked to town

Advertisement

we were just going to buy some snacks and already cooked food. We were busy grabbing the snacks.

Voice: It's you ladies.

We turned and the guy stood there dressed in a suit,he sure looked handsome.

Me: It's us?

Quinn: You helped me the other day.

Letho: It's nothing major.

Me:We were being good Samaritans to a lost sheep.

Quinn:If you put it that way thank you.

Me:Move along now, you thanked us.

Quinn:At first I thought you looked like Fleur Zarkina, with that attitude you must be another version of her.

Me:Fleur Zarkina?I have no idea who is that.

Quinn:I-

Voice: Leilani!

I turned and my father walked to us.

Quinn: You -

Me:Daddy.

Quinn:Dad?

Me:Ohh I am Fleur's sister, just better version of course.

Dad:Black.

Me:One of the Blacks.

Quinn:Quinn Black.

Me:I like them dangerous don't I?

Dad: You like what dangerous?

Me:This guy here is busy asking about Fleur,he wants to find her because of the scandal with his brother Nathan. He wants to hurt her.

Quinn:I did?

Me: Don't act like you forgot.

Letho: I'd suggest that you run Because she'll make you believe that you actually did.

He walked away confused.

Me:I had him Letho!

Letho:Poor guy.

Me:Mxm. Dad so Mom said that we should go shopping later.

UNGOWAM

I got in the car.

Me:Mamncane you -Genesis?

Genesis:Hey liefie.

I looked at the baby on his arms in confusion.

Genesis:Uhm it's your cousin.

Me: Cousin?

AJ: That's my son, Antonio.

Me: When you did give birth?

AJ:On the day he was born?

I looked at her stunned.

AJ:I called you for a reason,one the story isn't finished yet but now you should be able to love each other freely. This time without the fear of the family against you,do good and stop hurting people.

She sighed.

AJ:I gave you something,a name with the hope of a better future. With you I hoped that you would make things better than try to destroy people and follow in her footsteps. I did my part now do yours,be happy and enjoy this life,I am done fixing things.

Me:Thank you.

AJ:Thanks to Fleur,Luther is in love with her do he told me to come and get him. Now imagine if he wasn't in love, you would have been dead and you would have been crying. But then this is your time to enjoy your relationship.

Genesis:Thank you Aunt AJ.

AJ:Eh what happened to AJ? You are making me sound all old and old,yuuh no.

Me:Thank you.

AJ: Leave my baby and get out of my car.

I chuckled as I stepped out of the car, Genesis followed.

Genesis: Good to be back.

Me: You were stupid though.

Genesis: I love you too liefie.

Me: Now I think we're free. How about what you promised me huh?

He grinned.

Genesis: Not interested in that.

✓ GENESIS 49 FINALE

UNKNOWN [FEW MONTHS LATER]

Me: Look at that, everyone is dating whoever they want. They did good.

AJ:I actually did my part.

Me: Exactly as seen from her visions.

Haven:I wouldn't have been able to see that much past if it weren't for Avuyile.

Me: Now I believe that your kids are ready to rewrite the future.

Lungile:I definitely didn't believe any of this was going to happen,I mean we lost men and women who were chosen to bring the word of God here. I thought for a moment that we were going to die before anything happens.

Me:God never gives anyone something that they would never overcome. He gives what you can handle and will overthrow and eventually be what you came here for.

AJ:If we wanted wisdom from you,we would have asked or you could have sent a text.

They gasped.

Me: You are still not letting go of that bitterness Avuyile which is not-

AJ: No ways! No ways! We just lost people like us and I am suppose to pretend that this man's will is fine? Fine? What is fine about being murdered for believing him? Lilith the mother of these demons, Hecate the goddess of witchcraft, Satan, Lucifer whatever, are out plotting for my death everyday. He can just decide that my time on earth is over, that his damn will. Go according to the Bible Avuyile, the same Bible that let Moses open a way and kill the men that were following him and Israelites. If I can't help the person by praying, I'll kill them.

Me: Your orders were to help these kids make things right my child.

AJ: Your damn orders Pastor! Your orders! God or Jesus should come here and give me orders.

Voice: Prophetess Jange, you have to understand that sometimes just like Satan does. If you are resistant to him, he'll kill you, so God's wrath is much worse. You resist him by doing things he's against, he'll be left with no choice. He doesn't, of course have favourites, he's trying in his to show you the right way. The reason he's taking his time, you pray today and expect miracles tomorrow. You pray to him that he shows you the way, but you have not forgiven yourself, you haven't asked for forgiveness for the sins you committed.

I nodded.

Michael: You have been holding on to something but yet you want him to show himself, you are very ungrateful yet you want him to show his grace. You do things that are not to be done by someone who believes him, yet you expect him to show his mercy. You pray today, next week you think he has favourites. You partake in discussions that hurt and persecute people yet you are on your knees, praying for him to make a difference, you are holding on to idols and people that are not good yet you want change. God is very jealous, God is demanding and wants him only. Stop praying for what you want, pray for the fact you made it to this day, this year and have a full stomach. Manifest what you want but don't forget to thank him. Stop expecting an open hand when you are very closed to him.

She sat calmly.

Michael: All of us were sent to guide you through everything, we were not expecting you to be perfect. Angels do fall too, you have a long way but your mission was simple. Help the kids get together and you did that, they may not know how but you did your part.

Me: It is okay to feel like that, you feel like he's taken way too much and you are tired. When your time is over, it means that God is taking his people because he's coming.

Michael: Now he's giving you time to build that relationship with him

forgive all your trespassing even the trespassers.

AJ: I understand.

Me: You can leave us my children.

Michael: They don't know they are blocking their own blessings by judging His will.

Me: They were born on sin, they are my kids so they are bound to make mistakes. I understand that sometimes my father's will is overwhelming but thy will shall be done, antichrist is on its way so I should be taking my people to Father. The sinners will wait for that day in hell but I have to take them to Father, time is near.

Michael: What do we do?

Me: Guide the young prophet, he will be fighting against the antichrist. He will be the last before He comes.

Michael: The Prophetess?

Me: Their time isn't over yet, there's still Hecate's power that has to be destroyed then their time is over. Father is waiting for them, He's waiting for them to be beside him but first they will face that power and Lilith. Til then prepare them.

Michael: I will do that.

UNGOWAM

Me:First Christmas together, together.

Fleur: Dramatic months.

Britney:At first I really thought everyone was high about putting these families together. Now I realise, no this was a good thing.

Me:I am surprised that we made it this far.

Fleur:Yeah.

For the past two months,the families were brought together with Aunt AJ holding a gun. Everyone had to say their piece which explained their behaviour. We definitely needed a hall but a tent was hired,we talked only to realise that we inherited grudges from parents who easily forgave each other. Then we were forced to go out every weekend only to find out that we had a lot in common,for example everyone really thought Fleur was only rude but girl was hilarious and hood rat. We discovered things we didn't know about each other, really confusing how we didn't get along. Relationship wise?I was in lala island, Genesis was a sweetheart with a little demon in him. What surprised everyone is Fleur and Luther, unexpected but they were adorable, wasn't easy at first but eventually we came

to understand what happened. All in all,we did it,well because people came out about their relationships after we did.

Leilani:All I am saying your boyfriends are bad and boujie. Why am I single?

Fleur:Well you stood -

I hit her.

Fleur:Wha-Ohh.

Quinn tried Leilani and the girl showed him the door, eventually he got a girlfriend yet her and Quinn reached an agreement.

Leilani: He's good as a secret.

Diana:Who?

Leilani: Your boyfriend duhh.

Fleur:That is my sister.

Autumn: Sweetheart soon you will understand that men are bunch of hypocrites.

Leilani:But if I want to try him,I can.

Diana: What do you mean my boyfriend?

Me:Guys please no! It's Christmas and we can't afford drama!

Leilani:But I am giving Quinn the cookie?In exchange he hides me,spoils me rotten and calls me Little Lani.

Britney: Get bullet proof vests.

Diana: Bitch.

Leilani: He is treating you like a bitch.

Fleur: Leilani is very bitter, did I tell you?

Diana launched herself on Leilani who ducked and Diana went rolling on the table.

Leilani: I was just being honest though, I wasn't asked to lie or hide it.

Me: Date him then.

Leilani: Nah, he's good enough for side piece.

Autumn grabbed Diana.

Fleur: I am sure by now you have noticed that she likes provoking people, she's my sister ask Autumn.

Autumn: You have a lot in common actually.

Fleur: Like sleeping with people's men? Yeah obvious.

Me: I'll just go and call Mamncane.

TIA PETRA

Me: We made it!

AJ:I guess so.

Me: You don't sound happy.

MJ:It must have been that meeting she had in the morning.

AJ: Nothing serious. Don't wo-

Ungo: Mamncane!

AJ:Oh God why do I have to get kids that inherit the bad traits?!Deal with it!

Me:Well thank God I never had a daughter.

AJ:I want to die.

Me: I'll check that.

I walked back inside the house,I looked at the locomotion only to walk back outside.

Me:I think I should let strangle each other like we all did.

MJ:Kids and drama.

AJ:But at least we're doing good,so far.

Me:Who knew that we would be here? Together.

AJ:The devil that is for sure.

Me: We're doing good.

Candy:I have to say this Romeo and Juliet stuff with the kids,is disturbing. I can't believe that my little boy is interested in being married one day. Hayi bo? Have we grown that much?I was a teenager yesterday with Dante's fiancée killing people. AJ hated everyone,Tia was dying,MJ was getting bewitched by Vhulenda, Narnia was marrying a Quinton. Actually my only brother was persuading my best friend. Life was a mediocre and we pretended that it was okay.

Me:I literally,well purposely slept with Zak and I got a baby instead. Surprise!

MJ:I was getting chased by guns,got shot and a teenager helped me skip the country. How did you do it Avuyile?

AJ:I left the country.

Me:Right now we got grandchildren,I am a grandmother. Not so long ago I was just babying Isaac now he thinks he should propose.

Them:What?!

Me:Oh shit!More drinks? Coming up.

MJ: Hey come back here!

Me:No!

I ran.

✓ GENESIS 50 EPILOGUE

GENESIS

Everyone sat chatting as I thought everything through.

Me:Excuse me.

Everyone looked at me as I pulled the small cargo.

Me: Good evening everyone,I have few gifts to give. Look I can't also believe that we're here together. The Petras, Sanchez's,Bilsons,Manonas,Kingstons,Blacks,Janges,Zarkinas,Castles,Morokas, you name them but we are here. In these two months we've learnt to forgive each other and are spending first Christmas together. Clap to that.

Everyone clapped.

Me: I am proud of the names given to me by Mrs Avuyile Zarkina,at first I thought it was just names but I followed them. A well known writer wants to hear this story. Besides that, I am happy that everyone is here to witness tonight's magic. First I will give my mother this box,Mom I love you so much.

Mom:Thank you.

Me:Tricky part? You can't open it,the last person will be the first to do so.

Mom: You had to start with me.

Me:Dad, you are an amazing father thank you.

He smiled.

Me:My siblings should mind their businesses,I didn't get you anything at all.

Zane:Mxm.

Me:Uncle Zac for giving me a soulmate and being a legendary president. Aunt AJ.

I looked at her and smiled,she got up and hugged me.

AJ:I know what you want to say. You will always be my little boy.

Me:Thank you. Ungowam,love of my life,my heart beat

Advertisement

liefie, stubborn woman but flexible. Here you go.

Ungo:I love you too Genesis.

Me:Last but not least,First Lady MJ.

MJ:Hand it over.

Everyone laughed.

Me:Please read this first.

She opened the paper.

MJ:Mrs Manona, it's hard to believe that I love your daughter as much as I do. The moment I saw your daughter for the very first time will be stuck into my memory till the end of the days because it was the evening when the course of my life radically changed its direction. I keep in the sanctuary of my heart every minute we shared because from the first moment I was totally overwhelmed by her. I was so proud to make her meet my family because I was certainly sure that they would love her. I do not know how it had been possible to live without her support and cheerfulness, without listening to her singing and watching her dancing when she thinks nobody sees. I love dreaming with her because she understand me as nobody would ever understand. I love being ill if I know that she will be near and take care of me.

She took a deep breath.

MJ:Ungowam encourages me to get up every morning, to do great deeds and to constantly become better. She is my inspiration, my motivation, and my desirous goal. You know like nobody what is a happiness and where it is hidden. We both want to have a colourful and memorable life, and together we can make our dreams come true. I promise to do everything I only can to be a perfect match for Ungowam and to become a husband she deserves.

She looked at me so did Ungowam.

MJ: I want to become her happily-ever-after, and I will do my best for her incredible smile to never fade. She is the greatest and the most precious gift given to me by this life, so I wish the whole world knew about my infinite and limitless love for her. I am looking forward to the day when my last name will become ours, and our love will give a birth to a new family. She is the one I want to be for better, for worse, for richer, for poorer. My voice is trembling, and my heart beats at a furious pace since I hope she will say me yes and make me the luckiest man on Earth.

She covered her mouth.

MJ:Oh God!

She huffed.

MJ:On my knees I ask you Mrs Manona,can you ask her if she wants to marry me?

Ungo:Yes!!!!

Everyone clapped,I smiled as Ungowam jumped on me.

Me:She said yes!Phew Jesus.

MJ:I can't believe I cut onions.

AJ: Seriously Minothando? You are crying, it's not onions.

Mom:I don't know about the romance, it's a little disturbing.

Candy: I want to gag already.

I put the ring on her finger.

Ungo: Sneaky!

Mom: Can we open our gifts?

Me:Nope.

Mom:Brat.

.....**The End**.....

For daily latest books please visit <https://novelsguru.com/>

And also visit my Facebook page, and like and share it

<https://www.facebook.com/groups/3345453369055623>

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site
please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting
me and also don't forget to share it with your friends.

Dear Friends please download these books direct from
<https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African
books, and also supporting me Thanks.